Serfojee Rajah. 1829

THE WORKS OF HENRY FIELDING, ESQ.

2 1324

WITH

AN ESSAY

ON

HIS LIFE AND GENIUS,

BY

ARTHUR MURPHY, ESQ.

A NEW EDITION, IN FOURTEEN VOLUMES.

VOL. X.

LONDON:

Printed for J. Johnson; J. Nichols and Son; R. Baldwin; F. and C. Rivington; Otridge and Son; W. J. and J. Richardson; R. Faulder and Son; G Nicol and Son: T Payne; G. Robinson; W. Lowndes; Wilkie and Robinson; Scatcherd and Letterman; Lane and Newman; J. Walker; Vernor, Hood, and Sharpe; R. Lea; J. Nunn; Lackington, Allen, and Co.; Cuthell and Martin; Barker and Son; C. Law, E. Jeffery; Longman, Hurst, Rees, and Orme; Cadell and Davies; Black, Parry, and Co.; W Miller; I. Booker; R. H. Evans; S. Bagster; J. Harding; J. Mawman; J. Asperne; P. and W. Wynne; and Joseph Harding.

1808.

[illegible], Printer,
rnivals Inn Court.

1324

AMELIA.

Felices ter et amplius,
Quos irrupta tenet copula.

Γυναικὸς οὐδὲν χρῆμ' ἀνὴρ ληΐζεται
Ἐσθλῆς ἄμεινον, οὐδὲ ῥίγιον κακῆς.

OM, ⸸ FIEN
A08.10

TO

RALPH ALLEN, Esq.

SIR,

THE following book is sincerely designed to promote the cause of virtue, and to expose some of the most glaring evils, as well public as private, which at present infest the country; though there is scarce, as I remember, a single stroke of satire aimed at any one person throughout the whole.

The best man is the properest patron of such an attempt. This, I believe, will be readily granted; nor will the public voice, I think, be more divided to whom they shall give that appellation. Should a letter, indeed, be thus inscribed, DETUR OPTIMO, there are few persons who would think it wanted any other direction.

I will not trouble you with a preface concerning the work; nor endeavour to obviate any criticisms which can be made on it. The good-natured reader, if his heart should be here affected, will be inclined to pardon many faults for the pleasure he will receive from a tender sensation; and for readers of a different stamp, the more faults they can discover, the more, I am convinced, they will be pleased.

Nor will I assume the fulsome style of common dedicators. I have not their usual design in this epistle; nor will I borrow their language. Long, very long may it be, before a most dreadful circumstance shall make it possible for any pen to draw a just and true character of yourself, without incurring a suspicion of flattery in the bosoms of the malignant. This task, therefore, I shall defer till that day (if I should be so unfortunate as ever to see it), when every good man shall pay a tear for the satisfaction of his curiosity; a day which, at present, I believe, there is but one good man in the world who can think of it with unconcern.

Accept then, Sir, this small token of that love, that gratitude, and that respect, with which I shall always esteem it my GREATEST HONOUR to be,

SIR,

Your most obliged,

And most obedient

Humble Servant,

HENRY FIELDING.

Bow-Street,
Dec. 2, 1751.

CONTENTS

OF

THE TENTH VOLUME.

BOOK I.

Page

CHAP. I. *The Exordium, &c.* 1

CHAP. II. *The History sets out. Observations on the Excellency of the English Constitution, and curious Examinations before a Justice of Peace* 3

CHAP. III. *Containing the Inside of a Prison* 10

CHAP. IV. *Disclosing further Secrets of the Prison-House* 16

CHAP. V. *Containing certain Adventures which befel Mr. Booth in the Prison* 22

Page

CHAP. VI. *Containing the extraordinary Behaviour of Miss Matthews on her meeting with Booth, and some Endeavours to prove, by Reason and Authority, that it is possible for a Woman to appear to be what she really is not* 28

CHAP. VII. *In which Miss Matthews begins her History* 33

CHAP. VIII. *The History of Miss Matthews continued* 39

CHAP. IX. *In which Miss Matthews concludes her Relation* 45

CHAP. X. *Table-talk, consisting of a facetious Discourse that passed in the Prison* .. 54

BOOK II.

CHAP. I. *In which Captain Booth begins to relate his History* 61

CHAP. II. *Mr. Booth continues his Story. In this Chapter there are some Passages that may serve as a kind of Touchstone, by which a young Lady may examine the Heart of her Lover. I would advise, therefore, that every Lover be obliged to read it over in the Presence of his Mistress, and that she carefully watch his Emotions while he is reading* 66

Page

CHAP. III. *The Narrative continued. More of the Touchstone* 72

CHAP. IV. *The Story of Mr. Booth continued. In this Chapter the Reader will perceive a Glimpse of the Character of a very good Divine; with some Matters of a very tender Kind* 77

CHAP. V. *Containing strange Revolutions of Fortune* 81

CHAP. VI. *Containing many surprising Adventures* 85

CHAP. VII. *The Story of Booth continued. More surprising Adventures* 92

CHAP. VIII. *In which our Readers will probably be divided in their Opinion of Mr. Booth's Conduct* 98

CHAP. IX. *Containing a Scene of a different Kind from any of the preceding* 105

BOOK III.

CHAP. I. *In which Mr. Booth resumes his Story* 111

CHAP. II. *Containing a Scene of the tender Kind* 114

CHAP. III. *In which Mr. Booth sets forward on his Journey* 121

Page

CHAP. IV. *A Sea-Piece* 125

CHAP. V. *The Arrival of Booth at Gibraltar, with what there befel him* 131

CHAP. VI. *Containing Matters which will please some Readers* 136

CHAP. VII. *The Captain, continuing his Story, recounts some Particulars which, we doubt not, to many good People, will appear unnatural* .. 140

CHAP. VIII. *The Story of Booth continued* .. 147

CHAP. IX. *Containing very extraordinary Matters* 157

CHAP. X. *Containing a Letter of a very curious Kind* 163

CHAP. XI. *In which Mr. Booth relates his Return to England* 169

CHAP. XII. *In which Mr. Booth concludes his Story* 175

BOOK IV.

Page

CHAP. I. *Containing very mysterious Matter* 185

CHAP. II. *The latter Part of which we expect will please our Reader better than the former* 189

CHAP. III. *Containing wise Observations of the Author, and other Matters* 198

CHAP. IV. *In which Amelia appears in no unamiable Light* 207

CHAP. V. *Containing an Eulogium upon Innocence, and other grave matters* 211

CHAP. VI. *In which may appear, that Violence is sometimes done to the Name of Love* 220

CHAP. VII. *Containing a very extraordinary and pleasing Incident* 227

CHAP. VIII. *Containing various Matters* 232

CHAP. IX. *In which Amelia, with her Friend, goes to the Oratorio* 237

BOOK V.

CHAP. I. *In which the Reader will meet with an old Acquaintance* 245

CHAP. II. *In which Booth pays a visit to the noble Lord* 249

Page
CHAP. III. *Relating principally to the Affairs of Sergeant Atkinson* 264
CHAP. IV. *Containing Matters that require no Preface* 259
CHAP. V. *Containing much heroic Matter* .. 266
CHAP. VI. *In which the Reader will find Matter worthy his Consideration* 271
CHAP. VII. *Containing various Matters* 278
CHAP. VIII. *The heroic Behaviour of Colonel Bath* 285
CHAP. IX. *Being the last Chapter of the Fifth Book* 291

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I. *Panegyrics on Beauty, with other grave Matters* 297
CHAP. II. *Which will not appear, we presume, unnatural to all married Readers* 303
CHAP. III. *In which the History looks a little backwards* 308
CHAP. IV. *Containing a very extraordinary Incident* 315
CHAP. V. *Containing some Matters not very unnatural* 321

Page

CHAP. VI. *A Scene, in which some Ladies will possibly think Amelia's Conduct exceptionable* 327

CHAP. VII. *A Chapter in which there is much Learning* 333

CHAP. VIII. *Containing some unaccountable Behaviour in Mrs. Ellison* 338

CHAP. IX. *Containing a very strange Incident* 342

AMELIA.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Contains the Exordium, &c.

THE various accidents which befel a very worthy couple, after their uniting in the state of matrimony, will be the subject of the following history. The distresses which they waded through, were some of them so exquisite, and the incidents which produced these so extraordinary, that they seemed to require not only the utmost malice, but the utmost invention which superstition hath ever attributed to Fortune: though whether any such being interfered in the case, or, indeed, whether there be any such being in the universe, is a matter which I by no means presume to determine in the affirmative. To speak a bold truth, I am, after much mature deliberation, inclined to suspect, that the public voice hath, in all ages, done much injustice to Fortune, and hath convicted her of many facts in which she had not the least concern. I question much, whether we may not, by natural means, account for the success of knaves, the calamities of fools, with all the miseries in which men of sense sometimes involve themselves, by quitting

the directions of Prudence, and following the blind guidance of a predominant passion; in short, for all the ordinary phenomena which are imputed to fortune; whom, perhaps, men accuse with no less absurdity in life, than a bad player complains of ill luck at the game of chess.

But if men are sometimes guilty of laying improper blame on this imaginary being, they are altogether as apt to make her amends, by ascribing to her honours which she as little deserves. To retrieve the ill consequences of a foolish conduct, and by struggling manfully with distress to subdue it, is one of the noblest efforts of wisdom and virtue. Whoever, therefore, calls such a man fortunate, is guilty of no less impropriety in speech, than he would be, who should call the statuary or the poet fortunate, who carved a Venus, or who writ an Iliad.

Life may as properly be called an art as any other; and the great incidents in it are no more to be considered as mere accidents, than the several members of a fine statue, or a noble poem. The critics in all these are not content with seeing any thing to be great, without knowing why and how it came to be so. By examining carefully the several gradations which conduce to bring every model to perfection, we learn truly to know that science in which the model is formed: As histories of this kind therefore, may properly be called models of HUMAN LIFE; so by observing minutely the several incidents which tend to the catastrophe or completion of the whole, and the minute causes whence those incidents are produced, we shall best be instructed in this most useful of all arts, which I call the ART OF LIFE.

CHAP. II.

The History sets out. Observations on the Excellency of the English Constitution, and curious Examinations before a Justice of Peace.

ON the first of April, in the year ——, the watchmen of a certain parish (I know not particularly which), within the liberty of Westminster, brought several persons whom they had apprehended the preceding night, before Jonathan Thrasher, Esq. one of the justices of the peace for that liberty.

But here, reader, before we proceed to the trials of these offenders, we shall, after our usual manner, premise some things which it may be necessary for thee to know.

It hath been observed, I think, by many, as well as the celebrated writer of three letters, that no human institution is capable of consummate perfection. An observation which, perhaps, that writer at least gathered from discovering some defects in the polity even of this well-regulated nation. And, indeed, if there should be any such defect in a constitution which my lord Coke, long ago told us, ‘ the wisdom of all the wise men in the ‘ world, if they had all met together at one time, ‘ could not have equalled,’ which some of our wisest men who were met together long before, said, was too good to be altered in any particular; and which, nevertheless, hath been mending ever since, by a very great number of the said wise men: if, I say, this constitution should be imperfect, we may be allowed, I think, to doubt whe-

ther any such faultless model can be found among the institutions of men.

It will probably be objected, that the small imperfections which I am about to produce, do not lie in the laws themselves, but in the ill-execution of them ; but, with submission, this appears to me to be no less an absurdity, than to say of any machine that it is excellently made, though incapable of performing its functions. Good laws should execute themselves, in a well-regulated state ; at least, if the same legislature which provides the laws, doth not provide for the execution of them, they act as Graham would do, if he should form all the parts of a clock in the most exquisite manner, yet put them so together that the clock could not go. In this case, surely we might say that there was a small defect in the constitution of the clock.

To say the truth, Graham would soon see the fault, and would easily remedy it. The fault, indeed, could be no other than the parts were improperly disposed.

Perhaps, reader, I have another illustration, which will set my intention in still a clearer light before you. Figure to yourself then a family, the master of which should dispose of the several economical offices in the following manner ; viz. should put his butler on the coach-box, his steward behind his coach, his coachman in the butlery, and his footman in the stewardship, and in the same ridiculous manner should misemploy the talents of every other servant ; it is easy to see what a figure such a family must make in the world.

As ridiculous as this may seem, I have often considered some of our lower officers in our civil government to be disposed in this very manner. To begin, I think, as low as I well can, with the watchmen in our metropolis ; who being to guard

our streets by night from thieves and robbers, an office which at least requires strength of body, are chosen out of those poor old decrepit people, who are, from their want of bodily strength, rendered incapable of getting a livelihood by work. These men armed only with a pole, which some of them are scarce able to lift, are to secure the persons and houses of his majesty's subjects from the attacks of gangs of young, bold, stout, desperate, and well-armed villains.

Quæ non viribus istis
Munera conveniunt.

If the poor old fellows should run away from such enemies, no one I think can wonder, unless it be that they were able to make their escape.

The higher we proceed among out public officers and magistrates, the less defects of this kind will, perhaps, be observable. Mr. Thrasher, however, the justice before whom the prisoners above mentioned were now brought, had some few imperfections in his magistratical capacity. I own, I have been sometimes inclined to think, that this office of a justice of peace requires some knowledge of the law: for this simple reason; because in every case which comes before him, he is to judge and act according to law. Again, as these laws are contained in a great variety of books; the statutes which relate to the office of a justice of peace, making of themselves at least two large volumes in folio; and that part of his jurisdiction which is founded on the common law being dispersed in above a hundred volumes, I cannot conceive how this knowledge should be acquired without reading; and yet certain it is, Mr. Thrasher never read one syllable of the matter.

This, perhaps, was a defect; but this was not all: for where mere ignorance is to decide a point between two litigants, it will always be an even chance whether it decides right or wrong: but sorry am I to say, right was often in a much worse situation than this, and wrong hath often had five hundred to one on his side before that magistrate: who, if he was ignorant of the laws of England, was yet well versed in the laws of nature. He perfectly well understood that fundamental principle so strongly laid down in the institutes of the learned Rochefoucault; by which the duty of self-love is so strongly enforced, and every man is taught to consider himself as the centre of gravity, and to attract all things thither. To speak the truth plainly, the justice was never indifferent in a cause, but when he could get nothing on either side.

Such was the justice, to whose tremendous bar Mr. Gotobed the constable, on the day above mentioned, brought several delinquents, who, as we have said, had been apprehended by the watch for divers outrages.

The first who came upon this trial, was as bloody a spectre as ever the imagination of a murderer or a tragic poet conceived. This poor wretch was charged with a battery by a much stouter man than himself; indeed the accused person bore about him some evidence that he had been in an affray, his clothes being very bloody, but certain open sluices on his own head sufficiently shewed whence all the scarlet stream had issued, whereas the accuser had not the least mark or appearance of any wound. The justice asked the defendant, What he meant by breaking the king's peace?——To which he answered——'Upon my shoul I do love the king very 'well, and I have not been after breaking any thing 'of his that I do know, but upon my shoul this man

'hath brake my head, and my head did brake his 'stick; that is all, gra.' He then offered to produce several witnesses against this improbable accusation; but the justice presently interrupted him, saying, 'Sirrah, your tongue betrays your guilt. 'Your are an Irishman, and that is always sufficient 'evidence with me.'

The second criminal was a poor woman, who was taken up by the watch as a street-walker. It was alledged against her, that she was found walking the streets after twelve o'clock, and the watchman declared he believed her to be a common strumpet. She pleaded in her defence (as was really the truth) that she was a servant, and was sent by her mistress, who was a little shopkeeper, and upon the point of delivery, to fetch a midwife; which she offered to prove by several of the neighbours, if she was allowed to send for them. The justice asked her, Why she had not done it before? to which she answered, She had no money, and could get no messenger. The justice then called her several scurrilous names; and declaring she was guilty within the statute of street-walking, ordered her to Bridewell for a month.

A genteel young man and woman were then set forward, and a very grave looking person swore he caught them in a situation which we cannot as particularly describe here, as he did before the magistrate: who having received a wink from his clerk, declared with much warmth, that the fact was incredible and impossible. He presently discharged the accused parties, and was going, without any evidence, to commit the accuser for perjury; but this the clerk dissuaded him from, saying, he doubted whether a justice of peace had any such power. The justice at first differed in opinion; and said, 'He had seen a man stand in the pillory about

'perjury; nay, he had known a man in gaol for it 'too; and how came he there, if he was not committed thither?' 'Why that is true, Sir,' answered the clerk; 'and yet I have been told by a very 'great lawyer, that a man cannot be committed 'for perjury before he is indicted; and the reason 'is, I believe, because it is not against the peace 'before the indictment makes it so.' 'Why that 'may be,' cries the justice, 'and indeed perjury is 'but scandalous words, and I know a man cannot 'have a warrant for those, unless you put for 'rioting * them into the warrant.'

The witness was now about to be discharged, when the lady whom he had accused, declared she would swear the peace against him; for that he had called her a whore several times. 'Oho! you will 'sware the peace, madam, will you;' cries the justice, 'Give her the peace, presently; and pray, 'Mr. Constable, secure the prisoner, now we have 'him, while a warrant is made to take him up.' All which was immediately performed, and the poor witness, for want of sureties, was sent to prison.

A young fellow, whose name was Booth, was now charged with beating the watchman, in the execution of his office, and breaking his lanthorn. This was deposed by two witnesses; and the shat-

* *Opus est interprete.* By the laws of England abusive words are not punishable by the magistrate; some commissioners of the peace therefore, when one scold hath applied to them for a warrant against another, from a too eager desire of doing justice, have constructed a little harmless scolding into a riot, which is in law an outrageous breach of the peace committed by several persons, by three at least, nor can a less number be convicted of it. Under this word rioting, or riotting (for I have seen it spelt both ways,) many thousands of old women have been arrested and put to expence, sometimes in prison, for a little intemperate use of their tongues. This practice began to decrease in the year 1749.

tered remains of a broken lanthorn, which had been long preserved for the sake of its testimony, were produced to corroborate the evidence. The justice, perceiving the criminal to be but shabbily drest, was going to commit him without asking any further questions. At length, however, at the earnest request of the accused, the worthy magistrate submitted to hear his defence. The young man then alleged, as was in reality the case, 'That as 'he was walking home to his lodgings, he saw two 'men in the street cruelly beating a third, upon 'which he had stopt and endeavoured to assist the 'person who was so unequally attacked; that the 'watch came up during the affray, and took them 'all four into custody; that they were immediately 'carried to the roundhouse, where the two origi- 'nal assailants, who appeared to be men of fortune, 'found means to make up the matter, and were 'discharged by the constable ; a favour which he 'himself, having no money in his pocket, was un- 'able to obtain. He utterly denied having assault- 'ed any of the watchmen, and solemnly declared, 'that he was offered his liberty at the price of half 'a crown.'

Though the bare word of an offender can never be taken against the oath of his accuser; yet the matter of this defence was so pertinent, and delivered with such an air of truth and sincerity, that had the magistrate been endued with much sagacity, or had he been very moderately gifted with another quality very necessary to all who are to administer justice, he would have employed some labour in cross-examining the watchmen; at least he would have given the defendant the time he desired to send for the other persons who were present at the affray; neither of which he did. In short, the magistrate had too great an honour for Truth to

suspect that she ever appeared in sordid apparel; nor did he ever sully his sublime notions of that virtue, by uniting them with the mean ideas of poverty and distress.

There remained now only one prisoner, and that was the poor man himself in whose defence the last mentioned culprit was engaged. His trial took but a very short time. A cause of battery and broken lanthorn was instituted against him, and proved in the same manner; nor would the justice hear one word in defence: but though his patience was exhausted, his breath was not; for against this last wretch he poured forth a great many vollies of menaces and abuse.

The delinquents were then all dispatched to prison, under a guard of watchmen; and the justice and the constable adjourned to a neighbouring alehouse to take their morning repast.

CHAP. III.

Containing the Inside of a Prison.

MR. BOOTH (for we shall not trouble you with the rest) was no sooner arrived in the prison, than a number of persons gathered round him, all demanding garnish; to which Mr. Booth not making a ready answer, as indeed he did not understand the word, some were going to lay hold of him, when a person of apparent dignity came up and insisted that no one should affront the gentleman. This person then, who was no less than the master or keeper of the prison, turning towards Mr. Booth, acquainted him, that it was the custom of the

place for every prisoner upon his first arrival there, to give something to the former prisoners to make them drink. This, he said, was what they called garnish; and concluded with advising his new customer to draw his purse upon the present occasion: Mr. Booth answered, That he would very readily comply with this laudable custom, was it in his power; but that in reality he had not a shilling in his pocket, and, what was worse, he had not a shilling in the world.—' Oho! if that be the case,' cries the keeper, ' it is another matter, and I have ' nothing to say.' Upon which he immediately departed, and left poor Booth to the mercy of his companions, who, without loss of time, applied themselves to uncasing, as they termed it, and with such dexterity, that his coat was not only stript off, but out of sight in a minute.

Mr. Booth was too weak to resist, and too wise to complain of this usage. As soon, therefore, as he was at liberty, and declared free of the place, he summoned his philosophy, of which he had no inconsiderable share, to his assistance, and resolved to make himself as easy as possible under his present circumstances.

Could his own thoughts indeed have suffered him a moment to forget where he was, the dispositions of the other prisoners might have induced him to believe that he had been in a happier place: for much the greater part of his fellow-sufferers, instead of wailing and repining at their conditions, were laughing, singing, and diverting themselves with various kinds of sports and gambols.

The first person who accosted him was called Blear-eyed Moll, a woman of no very comely appearance. Her eye (for she had but one) whence she derived her nick name, was such as that nick-name bespoke; besides which, it had two remarka-

ble qualities ; for first, as if nature had been careful to provide for her own defect, it constantly looked towards her blind side ; and secondly, the ball consisted almost entirely of white, or rather yellow, with a little grey spot in the corner, so small that it was scarce discernible. Nose she had none ; for Venus, envious perhaps at her former charms, had carried off the gristly part; and some earthly damsel, perhaps, from the same envy, had levelled the bone with the rest of her face : indeed it was far beneath the bones of her cheeks, which rose proportionally higher than is usual. About half a dozen ebony teeth fortified that large and long canal which nature had cut from ear to ear, at the bottom of which was a chin preposterously short, nature having turned up the bottom, instead of suffering it to grow to its due length.

Her body was well adapted to her face ; she measured full as much round the middle as from head to foot ; for besides the extreme breadth of her back, her vast breasts had long since forsaken their native home, and had settled themselves a little below the girdle.

I wish certain actresses on the stage, when they are to perform characters of no amiable cast, would study to dress themselves with the propriety with which Blear-eyed Moll was now arrayed. For the sake of our squeamish reader, we shall not descend to particulars : let it suffice to say, nothing more ragged or more dirty was ever emptied out of the roundhouse at St. Giles's.

We have taken the more pains to describe this person, for two remarkable reasons ; the one is, that this unlovely creature was taken in the fact with a very pretty young fellow ; the other, which is more productive of moral lesson, is, that however wretched her fortune may appear to the reader, she

was one of the merriest persons in the whole prison.

Blear-eyed Moll then came up to Mr. Booth with a smile, or rather grin on her countenance, and asked him for a dram of gin; and when Booth assured her that he had not a penny of money, she replied,—'D——n your eyes, I thought by your 'look you had been a clever fellow, and upon the 'snaffling lay * at least; but d——n your body 'and eyes, I find you are some sneaking budge † 'rascal.' She then launched forth a volley of dreadful oaths, interlarded with some language not proper to be repeated here, and was going to lay hold on poor Booth, when a tall prisoner, who had been very earnestly eyeing Booth for some time, came up, and taking her by the shoulder, flung her off at some distance, cursing her for a b—h, and bidding her let the gentleman alone.

This person was not himself of the most inviting aspect. He was long visaged, and pale, with a red beard of above a fortnight's growth. He was attired in a brownish black coat, which would have shewed more holes than it did, had not the linen which appeared through it, been entirely of the same colour with the cloth.

This gentleman, whose name was Robinson, addressed himself very civilly to Mr. Booth, and told him he was sorry to see one of his appearance in that place: 'For as to your being without your 'coat, Sir,' says he, 'I can easily account for that; 'and, indeed, dress is the least part which distin-'guishes a gentleman.' At which words he cast a significant look on his own coat, as if he desired

* A cant term for robbery on the highway.
† Another cant term for pilfering.

they should be applied to himself. He then proceeded in the following manner:

'I perceive, Sir, you are but just arrived in this 'dismal place, which is, indeed, rendered more 'detestable by the wretches who inhabit it, than 'by any other circumstance; but even these a wise 'man will soon bring himself to bear with indif- 'ference: for what is, is: and what must be, must 'be. The knowledge of this, which, simple as it 'appears, is in truth, the height of all philosophy, 'renders a wise man superior to every evil which 'can befal him. I hope, Sir, no very dreadful ac- 'cident is the cause of your coming hither; but 'whatever it was, you may be assured it could 'not be otherwise: for all things happen by an in- 'evitable fatality; and a man can no more resist the 'impulse of fate, than a wheelbarrow can the force 'of its driver.'

Besides the obligation which Mr. Robinson had conferred on Mr. Booth, in delivering him from the insults of Blear-eyed Moll, there was something in the manner of Robinson, which, notwithstanding the meanness of his dress, seemed to distinguish him from the crowd of wretches who swarmed in those regions; and above all, the sentiments which he had just declared, very nearly coincided with those of Mr. Booth: this gentleman was what they call a freethinker; that is to say, a deist; or, perhaps, an atheist; for though he did not absolutely deny the existence of a God; yet he entirely denied his providence. A doctrine which, if it is not downright atheism, hath a direct tendency towards it; and, as Dr. Clarke observes, may soon be driven into it. And as to Mr. Booth, though he was in his heart an extreme well-wisher to religion (for he was an honest man) yet his notions of it were very slight and uncertain. To say

truth, he was in the wavering condition so finely described by Claudian:

labefacta cadebat
Religio, causæque viam non sponte *sequebar*
Alterius; vacuo quæ currere semina motu
Affirmat; magnumque novas per inane figuras
Fortuna, non arte, regi; quæ numina sensu
Ambiguo, vel nulla putat, vel nescia nostri.

This way of thinking, or rather of doubting, he had contracted from the same reasons which Claudian assigns, and which had induced Brutus in his latter days to doubt the existence of that virtue which he had all his life cultivated. In short, poor Booth imagined, that a larger share of misfortunes had fallen to his lot than he had merited; and this led him, who (though a good classical scholar) was not deeply learned in religious matters, into a disadvantageous opinion of Providence. A dangerous way of reasoning, in which our conclusions are not only too hasty, from an imperfect view of things; but we are likewise liable to much error from partiality to ourselves: viewing our virtues and vices as through a perspective in which we turn the glass always to our own advantage, so as to diminish the one, and as greatly to magnify the other.

From the above reasons, it can be no wonder that Mr. Booth did not decline the acquaintance of this person, in a place which could not promise to afford him any better. He answered him, therefore, with great courtesy, as indeed he was of a very good and gentle disposition, and, after expressing a civil surprise at meeting him there, declared himself to be of the same opinion with regard to the necessity of human actions; adding,

however, that he did not believe men were under any blind impulse or direction of fate; but that every man acted merely from the force of that passion which was uppermost in his mind, and could do no otherwise.

A discourse now ensued between the two gentlemen, on the necessity arising from the impulse of fate, and the necessity arising from the impulse of passion, which, at it will make a pretty pamphlet of itself, we shall reserve for fome future opportunity. When this was ended, they set forward to survey the gaol, and the prisoners, with the several cases of whom Mr. Robinson, who had been some time under confinement, undertook to make Mr. Booth acquainted.

CHAP. IV.

Disclosing further Secrets of the Prison-house.

THE first persons whom they passed by were three men in fetters, who were enjoying themselves very merrily over a bottle of wine, and a pipe of tobacco. These, Mr. Robinson informed his friend, were three street-robbers, and were all certain of being hanged the ensuing sessions. So inconsiderable an object, said he, is misery to light minds, when it is at any distance.

A little farther they beheld a man prostrate on the ground, whose heavy groans and frantic actions, plainly indicated the highest disorder of mind. This person was, it seems, committed for a small felony; and his wife, who then lay-in, upon hearing the news, had thrown herself from

a window two pair of stairs high, by which means he had, in all probability, lost both her and his child.

A very pretty girl then advanced towards them, whose beauty Mr. Booth could not help admiring the moment he saw her; declaring, at the same time, he thought she had great innocence in her countenance. Robinson said she was committed thither as an idle and disorderly person, and a common street-walker. As she passed by Mr. Booth, she damned his eyes, and discharged a volley of words, every one of which was too indecent to be repeated.

They now beheld a little creature sitting by herself in a corner, and crying bitterly. This girl, Mr. Robinson said, was committed, because her father-in-law, who was in the grenadier-guards, had sworn that he was afraid of his life, or of some bodily harm which she would do him, and she could get no sureties for keeping the peace; for which reason, justice Thrasher had committed her to prison.

A great noise now arose, occasioned by the prisoners all flocking to see a fellow whipt for petty larceny, to which he was condemned by the court of quarter-sessions; but this soon ended in the disappointment of the spectators; for the fellow, after being stript, having advanced another sixpence, was discharged untouched.

This was immediately followed by another bustle; Blear-eyed Moll, and several of her companions, having got possession of a man who was committed for certain odious unmanlike practices, not fit to be named, were giving him various kinds of discipline, and would probably have put an end to him, had he not been rescued out of their hands by authority.

When this bustle was a little allayed, Mr. Booth took notice of a young woman in rags sitting on the ground, and supporting the head of an old man in her lap, who appeared to be giving up the ghost. These, Mr. Robinson informed him, were father and daughter; that the latter was committed for stealing a loaf, in order to support the former, and the former for receiving it, knowing it to be stolen.

A well-dressed man then walked surlily by them, whom Mr. Robinson reported to have been committed on an indictment found against him for a most horrid perjury; but, says he, we expect him to be bailed to-day. Good heaven! cries Booth, can such villains find bail, and is no person charitable enough to bail that poor father and daughter? Oh! Sir, answered Robinson, the offence of the daughter, being felony, is held not to be bailable in law; whereas perjury is a misdemeanor only; and therefore persons who are even indicted for it, are, nevertheless, capable of being bailed. Nay, of all perjuries, that of which this man is indicted, is the worst; for it was with an intention of taking away the life of an innocent person by form of law. As to perjuries in civil matters, they are not so very criminal. They are not, said Booth; and yet even these are a most flagitious offence, and worthy the highest punishment. Surely they ought to be distinguished, answered Robinson, from the others: for what is taking away a little property from a man, compared to taking away his life, and his reputation, and ruining his family into the bargain?—I hope there can be no comparison in the crimes, and I think there ought to be none in the punishment. However, at present, the punishment of all perjury is only pillory, and transportation for seven years; and as it a traversable and bailable offence,

methods are often found to escape any punishment at all.*

Booth expressed great astonishment at this, when his attention was suddenly diverted by the most miserable object that he had yet seen. This was a wretch almost naked, and who bore in his countenance, joined to an appearance of honesty, the marks of poverty, hunger, and disease. He had, moreover, a wooden leg, and two or three scars on his forehead. The case of this poor man is, indeed, unhappy enough, said Robinson. He hath served his country, lost his limb, and received several wounds at the siege of Gibraltar. When he was discharged from the hospital abroad, he came over to get into that of Chelsea, but could not immediately, as none of his officers were then in England. In the mean time, he was one day apprehended and committed hither on suspicion of stealing three herrings from a fishmonger. He was tried several months ago for this offence, and acquitted; indeed, his innocence manifestly appeared at the trial; but he was brought back again for his fees, and here he hath lain ever since.

Booth expressed great horror at this account, and declared if he had only so much money in his pocket, he would pay his fees for him; but added, that he was not possessed of a single farthing in the world.

Robinson hesitated a moment, and then said, with a smile, 'I am going to make you, Sir, a very odd 'proposal after your last declaration; but what say 'you to a game at cards? it will serve to pass a te-

* By removing the indictment by *certiorari* into the King's Bench, the trial is so long postponed, and the costs are so highly encreased, that prosecutors are often tired out, and some incapacitated from pursuing. *Verbum sapienti.*

'dious hour, and may divert your thoughts from 'more unpleasant speculations.'

I do not imagine Booth would have agreed to this: for though some love of gaming had been formerly amongst his faults; yet he was not so egregiously addicted to that vice, as to be tempted by the shabby plight of Robinson, who had, if I may so express myself, no charms for a gamester. If he had, however, any such inclinations, he had no opportunity to follow them; for before he could make any answer to Robinson's proposal, a strapping wench came up to Booth, and, taking hold of his arm, asked him to walk aside with her: saying, 'What a pox, are you such a fresh cull that you do 'not know this fellow? why, he is a gambler, and 'committed for cheating at play. There is not such 'a pickpocket in the whole quad.'*

A scene of altercation now ensued, between Robinson and the Lady, which ended in a bout at fisticuffs, in which the lady was greatly superior to the philosopher.

While the two combatants were engaged, a grave looking man, rather better dressed than the majority of the company, came up to Mr. Booth, and taking him aside, said, 'I am sorry, Sir, to see a 'gentleman, as you appear to be, in such intimacy 'with that rascal, who makes no scruple of dis-'owning all revealed religion. As for crimes, they 'are human errors, and signify but little; nay, 'perhaps the worse a man is by nature, the more 'room there is for grace. The spirit is active, and 'loves best to inhabit those minds where it may 'meet with the most work. Whatever your crime 'be, therefore, I would not have you despair; but 'rather rejoice at it: for perhaps it may be the

* A cant word for a prison.

'means of your being called.' He ran on for a considerable time with this cant, without waiting for an answer, and ended in declaring himself a methodist.

Just as the methodist had finished his discourse, a beautiful young woman was ushered into the gaol. She was genteel, and well dressed, and did not in the least resemble those females whom Mr. Booth had hitherto seen. The constable had no sooner delivered her at the gate, than she asked, with a commanding voice, for the keeper; and, when he arrived, she said to him, 'Well, Sir, 'whither am I to be conducted? I hope I am not 'to take up my lodgings with these creatures.' The keeper answered, with a kind of surly respect, 'Madam, we have rooms for those that can afford 'to pay for them.' At these words she pulled a handsome purse from her pocket, in which many guineas chinked, saying, with an air of indignation, 'That she was not come thither on account of po'verty.' The keeper no sooner viewed the purse, than his features became all softened in an instant; and with all the courtesy of which he was master, he desired the lady to walk with him, assuring her that she should have the best apartment in his house.

Mr. Booth was now left alone; for the methodist had forsaken him, having, as the phrase of the sect is, searched him to the bottom. In fact, he had thoroughly examined every one of Mr. Booth's pockets; from which he had conveyed away a penknife, and an iron snuff-box, these being all the movables which were to be found.

Booth was standing near the gate of the prison, when the young lady above mentioned was introduced into the yard. He viewed her features very attentively, and was persuaded that he knew her.

She was indeed so remarkably handsome, that it was hardly possible for any who had ever seen her to forget her. He inquired of one of the underkeepers, if the name of the prisoner lately arrived was not Matthews; to which he was answered, that her name was not Matthews but Vincent, and that she was committed for murder.

The latter part of this information made Mr. Booth suspect his memory more than the former; for it was very possible that she might have changed her name; but he hardly thought she could so far have changed her nature as to be guilty of a crime so very incongruous with her former gentle manners: for Miss Matthews had both the birth and education of a gentlewoman. He concluded therefore, that he was certainly mistaken, and rested satisfied, without any further inquiry.

CHAP. V.

Containing certain Adventures which befel Mr. Booth in the Prison.

THE remainder of the day Mr. Booth spent in melancholy contemplation on his present condition. He was destitute of the common necessaries of life, and consequently unable to subsist where he was; nor was there a single person in town to whom he could, with any reasonable hope, apply for his delivery. Grief for some time banished the thoughts of food from his mind; but, in the morning, nature began to grow uneasy for want of her usual nourishment: for he had not eat a morsel during the last forty hours. A penny loaf, which is, it seems, the

ordinary allowance to the prisoners in Bridewell, was now delivered him; and while he was eating this, a man brought him a little packet sealed up, informing him, that it came by a messenger, who said it required no answer.

Mr. Booth now opened his packet, and after unfolding several pieces of blank paper successively, at last discovered a guinea, wrapt with great care, in the innermost paper. He was vastly surprised at this sight, as he had few, if any friends, from whom he could expect such a favour, slight as it was; and not one of his friends, as he was apprised, knew of his confinement. As there was no direction to the packet, nor a word of writing contained in it, he began to suspect that it was delivered to the wrong person; and, being one of the most untainted honesty, he found out the man who gave it to him, and again examined him concerning the person who brought it, and the message delivered with it. The man assured Booth that he had made no mistake: saying, 'If your name is Booth, Sir, I am positive 'you are the gentleman to whom the parcel I gave 'you belongs.'

The most scrupulous honesty would perhaps, in such a situation, have been well enough satisfied in finding no owner for the guinea; especially when proclamation had been made in the prison, that Mr. Booth had received a packet without any direction, to which, if any person had any claim, and would discover the contents, he was ready to deliver it to such claimant. No such claimant being found (I mean none who knew the contents; for many swore that they expected just such a packet, and believed it to be their property), Mr. Booth very calmly resolved to apply the money to his own use.

The first thing after redemption of the coat, which

Mr. Booth, hungry as he was, thought of, was to supply himself with snuff, which he had long, to his great sorrow, been without. On this occasion, he presently missed that iron box which the methodist had so dextrously conveyed out of his pocket, as we mentioned in the last chapter.

He no sooner missed this box, than he immediately suspected that the gambler was the person who had stolen it; nay, so well was he assured of this man's guilt, that it may, perhaps, be improper to say he barely suspected it. Though Mr. Booth was, as we have hinted, a man of a very sweet disposition; yet was he rather overwarm. Having, therefore, no doubt concerning the person of the thief, he eagerly sought him out, and very bluntly charged him with the fact.

The gambler, whom I think we should now call the philosopher, received this charge without the least visible emotion either of mind or muscle.—After a short pause of a few moments, he answered with great solemnity, as follows: 'Young man, I 'am entirely unconcerned at your groundless suspicion. He that censures a stranger, as I am to 'you, without any cause, makes a worse compliment to himself than to the stranger. You know 'yourself, friend; you know not me. It is true, 'indeed, you heard me accused of being a cheat 'and a gamester; but who is my accuser? look at 'my apparel, friend; do thieves and gamesters 'wear such clothes as these? play is my folly, not 'my vice; it is my impulse, and I have been a 'martyr to it. Would a gamester have asked another to play when he could have lost eighteen-'pence and won nothing? however, if you are not 'satisfied, you may search my pockets; the out-'side of all but one will serve your turn, and in 'that one, there is the eighteen pence I told you of.'

He then turned up his clothes ; and his pockets entirely resembled the pitchers of the Belides.

Booth was a little staggered at this defence. He said, the real value of the iron box was too inconsiderable to mention ; but that he had a capricious value for it, for the sake of the person who gave it him : 'for though it is not,' said he, 'worth six-'pence, I would willingly give a crown to any one 'who would bring it me again.'

Robinson answered, 'If that be the case, you 'have nothing more to do but to signify your in-'tention in the prison ; and I am well convinced 'you will not be long without regaining the pos-'session of your snuff-box.'

This advice was immediately followed, and with success, the methodist presently producing the box ; which, he said, he had found, and should have returned it before, had he known the person to whom it belonged ; adding, with uplifted eyes, that the spirit would not suffer him knowingly to detain the goods of another, however inconsiderable the value was. 'Why so, friend?' said Robinson. 'Have 'I not heard you often say, the wickeder any man 'was, the better, provided he was what you call a 'believer.' 'You mistake me,' cries Cooper, (for that was the name of the methodist) ; 'no man can 'be wicked after he is possessed by the spirit. 'There is a wide difference between the days of 'sin, and the days of grace. I have been a sinner 'myself.' 'I believe thee,' cries Robinson, with a sneer. 'I care not,' answered the other, 'what 'an atheist believes. I suppose you would insinu-'ate that I stole the snuff-box ; but I value not 'your malice : the Lord knows my innocence.' He then walked off with the reward ; and Booth, returning to Robinson, very earnestly asked pardon for his groundless suspicion : which the other, with-

out any hesitation, accorded him, saying, 'You 'never accused me, Sir; you suspected some gam-'bler, with whose character I have no concern. I 'should be angry with a friend or acquaintance who 'should give a hasty credit to any allegation against 'me; but I have no reason to be offended with 'you for believing what the woman, and the rascal 'who is just gone, and who is committed here for 'a pickpocket, which you did not perhaps know, 'told you to my disadvantage. And if you thought 'me to be a gambler, you had just reason to sus-'pect any ill of me: for I myself am confined here 'by the perjury of one of those villains: who hav-'ing cheated me of my money at play, and hear-'ing that I intended to apply to a magistrate against 'him, himself began the attack, and obtained a 'warrant against me of justice Thrasher, who, with-'out hearing one speech in my defence, committed 'me to this place.

Booth testified great compassion at this account; and he having invited Robinson to dinner, they spent that day together. In the afternoon, Booth indulged his friend with a game at cards; at first for halfpence, and afterwards for shillings, when fortune so favoured Robinson, that he did not leave the other a single shilling in his pocket.

A surprising run of luck in a gamester, is often mistaken for somewhat else, by persons who are not over-zealous believers in the divinity of fortune. I have known a stranger at Bath, who hath happened fortunately (I might almost say unfortunately), to have four by honours in his hand almost every time he dealt, for a whole evening, shunned universally by the whole company the next day. And certain it is, that Mr. Booth, though of a temper very little inclined to suspicion, began to waver in his opinion, whether the character given by Mr. Robinson of

himself, or that which the others gave of him, was the truer.

In the morning, hunger paid him a second visit, and found him again in the same situation as before. After some deliberation, therefore, he resolved to ask Robinson to lend him a shilling or two of that money which was lately his own. And this experiment, he thought, would confirm him either in a good or evil opinion of that gentleman.

To this demand, Robinson answered, with great alacrity, that he should very gladly have complied, had not fortune played one of her jade tricks with him: 'for since my winning of you,' said he, 'I 'have been stript not only of your money, but my 'own.' He was going to harangue farther; but Booth, with great indignation, turned from him.

This poor gentleman had very little time to reflect on his own misery, or the rascality, as it appeared to him, of the other, when the same person, who had the day before delivered him the guinea from the unknown hand, again accosted him, and told him a lady in the house (so he expressed himself), desired the favour of his company.

Mr. Booth immediately obeyed the message, and was conducted into a room in the prison, where he was presently convinced that Mrs. Vincent was no other than his old acquaintance Miss Matthews.

CHAP. VI.

Containing the extraordinary Behaviour of Miss Matthews on her meeting with Booth, and some Endeavours to prove, by Reason and Authority, that it is possible for a Woman to appear to be what she really is not.

EIGHT or nine years had passed, since any interview between Mr. Booth and Miss Matthews; and their meeting now in so extraordinary a place affected both of them with an equal surprise.

After some immaterial ceremonies, the lady acquainted Mr. Booth, that having heard there was a person in the prison who knew her by the name of Matthews, she had great curiosity to inquire who he was, whereupon he had been shewn to her from the window of the house; that she immediately recollected him, and being informed of his distressful situation, for which she expressed great concern, she had sent him that guinea which he had received the day before; and then proceeded to excuse herself for not having desired to see him at that time, when she was under the greatest disorder and hurry of spirits.

Booth made many handsome acknowledgements of her favour; and added, that he very little wondered at the disorder of her spirits, concluding, that he was heartily concerned at seeing her there; but I hope, Madam, said he——

Here he hesitated; upon which, bursting into an agony of tears, she cried out, 'O captain! captain! 'many extraordinary things have past since last I 'saw you. O gracious heaven! did I ever expect

'that this would be the next place of our meet-'ing!'

She then flung herself into her chair, where she gave a loose to her passion, whilst he, in the most affectionate and tender manner, endeavoured to soothe and comfort her; but passion itself did, probably, more for its own relief, than all his friendly consolations. Having vented this in a large flood of tears she became pretty well composed; but Booth unhappily mentioning her father, she again relapsed into an agony, and cried out, 'Why? why will you 'repeat the name of that dear man? I have dis-'graced him, Mr. Booth, I am unworthy the name 'of his daughter.'—Here passion again stopped her words, and discharged itself in tears.

After this second vent of sorrow or shame; or, if the reader pleases, of rage; she once more recovered from her agonies. To say the truth, these are, I believe, as critical discharges of nature, as any of those which are so called by the physicians; and do more effectually relieve the mind, than any remedies with which the whole Materia Medica of philosophy can supply it.

When Mrs. Vincent had recovered her faculties, she perceived Booth standing silent, with a mixture of concern and astonishment in his countenance; then addressing herself to him with an air of most bewitching softness, of which she was a perfect mistress, she said, 'I do not wonder at your amaze-'ment, Captain Booth; nor indeed at the concern 'which you so plainly discover for me: for I well 'know the goodness of your nature: but, O, Mr. 'Booth! believe me, when you know what hath 'happened since our last meeting, your concern 'will be raised, however your astonishment may 'cease. O, Sir! you are a stranger to the cause 'of my sorrows.'

'I hope I am, Madam,' answered he, 'for I 'cannot believe what I have heard in the prison— 'surely murder'—at which words she started from her chair, repeating, murder! 'Oh! it is music in 'my ears!—You have heard then the cause of my 'commitment, my glory, my delight, my repara- 'tion:—Yes, my old friend, this is the hand, this 'is the arm that drove the penknife to his heart. 'Unkind fortune, that not one drop of his blood 'reached my hand.—Indeed, Sir, I would never 'have washed it from it.—But though I have not 'the happiness to see it on my hand, I have the glo- 'rious satisfaction of remembering I saw it run in 'rivers on the floor; I saw it forsake his cheeks. 'I saw him fall a martyr to my revenge. And is 'the killing a villain to be called murder? perhaps 'the law calls it so.—Let it call it what it will, or 'punish me as it pleases.——Punish me!—no, no '—that is not in the power of man—not of that 'monster man, Mr. Booth. I am undone, am re- 'venged, and have now no more business for life; 'let them take it from me when they will.'

Our poor gentleman turned pale with horror at this speech, and the ejaculation of Good Heavens! what do I hear! burst spontaneously from his lips; nor can we wonder at this, though he was the bravest of men; for her voice, her looks, her gestures, were properly adapted to the sentiments she exprest. Such indeed was her image, that neither could Shakspeare describe, nor Hogarth paint, nor Clive act a fury in higher perfection.

'What do you hear?' reiterated she. 'You hear 'the resentment of the most injured of women. 'You have heard, you say, of the murder; but do 'you know the cause, Mr. Booth? have you, since 'your return to England, visited that country where 'we formerly knew one another? tell me, do you

'know my wretched story? tell me that, my 'friend.'

Booth hesitated for an answer; indeed, he had heard some imperfect stories, not much to her advantage. She waited not till he had formed a speech; but cried, 'Whatever you may have heard, 'you cannot be acquainted with all the strange accidents which have occasioned your seeing me in 'a place which at our last parting was so unlikely that I should ever have been found in; 'nor can you know the cause of all that I have 'uttered, and which, I am convinced, you never 'expected to have heard from my mouth. If 'these circumstances raise your curiosity, I will satisfy it.'

He answered, That curiosity was too mean a word to express his ardent desire of knowing her story. Upon which, with very little previous ceremony, she began to relate what is written in the following chapter.

But before we put an end to this, it may be necessary to whisper a word or two to the critics, who have, perhaps, begun to express no less astonishment than Mr. Booth, that a lady, in whom we had remarked a most extraordinary power of displaying softness, should, the very next moment after the words were out of her mouth, express sentiments becoming the lips of a Dalila, Jezebel, Medea, Semiramis, Parysatis, Tanaquil, Livilla, Messalina, Agrippina, Brunichilde, Elfrida, lady Macbeth, Joan of Naples, Christina of Sweden, Katharine Hays, Sarah Malcolm, Con. Philips,* or any other heroine of the tender sex, which history, sacred or profane, ancient or modern, false or true, hath recorded.

* Though last, not least.

We desire such critics to remember, that it is the same English climate in which, on the lovely 10th of June, under a serene sky, the amorous Jacobite, kissing the odoriferous zephyr's breath, gathers a nosegay of white roses to deck the whiter breast of Celia; and in which, on the 11th of June, the very next day, the boisterous Boreas, roused by the hollow thunder, rushes horrible through the air, and, driving the wet tempest before him, levels the hope of the husbandman with the earth, dreadful remembrance of the consequences of the revolution.

Again, let it be remembered, that it is the self same Celia, all tender, soft, and delicate; who with a voice, the sweetness of which the Syrens might envy, warbles the harmonious song in praise of the young adventurer; and again, the next day, or perhaps, the next hour, with fiery eyes, wrinkled brows, and foaming lips, roars forth treason and nonsense in a political argument with some fair one, of a different principle.

Or, if the critic be a whig, and consequently dislikes such kind of similies, as being too favourable to Jacobitism, let him be contented with the following story:

I happened in my youth to sit behind two ladies in a side-box at a play, where, in the balcony on the opposite side was placed the inimitable B——y C——s, in company with a young fellow of no very formal, or indeed sober, appearance. One of the ladies, I remember, said to the other—'Did you 'ever see any thing look so modest and so innocent as that girl over the way? what pity it is such 'a creature should be in the way of ruin, as I am 'afraid she is, by her being alone with that young 'fellow!' Now this lady was no bad physiognomist; for it was impossible to conceive a greater appearance of modesty, innocence, and simplicity, than

what nature had displayed in the countenance of that girl; and yet, all appearances notwithstanding, I myself (remember critic, it was in my youth) had a few mornings before seen that very identical picture of all those engaging qualities in bed with a rake at a bagnio, smoking tobacco, drinking punch, talking obscenity, and swearing and cursing with all the impudence and impiety of the lowest and most abandoned trull of a soldier.

CHAP. VII.

In which Miss Matthews begins her History.

MISS Matthews having barred the door on the inside as securely as it was before barred on the outside, proceeded as follows:

'You may imagine, I am going to begin my 'history at the time when you left the country; 'but I cannot help reminding you of something 'which happened before. You will soon recollect 'the incident; but I believe you little know the 'consequence either at that time or since. Alas! 'I could keep a secret then! now I have no secrets; the world knows all; and it is not worth 'my while to conceal any thing. Well!—You 'will not wonder, I believe.—I protest I can hardly tell it you, even now.——But I am convinced 'you have too good an opinion of yourself to be 'surprised at any conquest you may have made. '——Few men want that good opinion—and perhaps very few had ever more reason for it. Indeed, Will, you was a charming fellow in those 'days; nay, you are not much altered for the

'worse now, at least in the opinion of some wo-'men; for your complexion and features are 'grown much more masculine than they were; Here Booth made her a low bow, most probably with a compliment; and after a little hesitation, she again proceeded——' Do you remember a con-'test which happened at an assembly, betwixt 'myself and Miss Johnson, about standing upper-'most? you was then my partner; and young 'Williams danced with the other lady. The par-'ticulars are not now worth mentioning, though 'I suppose you have long since forgot them. Let 'it suffice that you supported my claim, and Wil-'liams very sneakingly gave up that of his part-'ner, who was, with much difficulty, afterwards 'prevailed to dance with him. You said—I am 'sure I repeat the words exactly, that ' you would 'not for the world affront any lady there; but 'that you thought you might, without any such 'danger, declare that there was no assembly in 'which that lady, meaning your humble servant, 'was not worthy of the uppermost place; nor will 'I, said you, suffer the first duke in England, 'when she is at the uppermost end of the room, 'and hath called her dance, to lead his partner 'above her.'

'What made this the more pleasing to me was, 'that I secretly hated Miss Johnson. Will you 'have the reason? why, then, I will tell you ho-'nestly, she was my rival;——that word perhaps 'astonishes you, as you never, I believe, heard of 'any one who made his addresses to me; and in-'deed my heart was, till that night, entirely in-'different to all mankind. I mean, then, that she 'was my rival for praise, for beauty, for dress, for 'fortune, and consequently for admiration. My 'triumph on this conquest is not to be expressed

'any more than my delight in the person to whom 'I chiefly owed it. The former, I fancy, was visible to the whole company; and I desired it 'should be so; but the latter was so well concealed, that no one, I am confident, took any 'notice of it. And yet you appeared to me that 'night to be an angel. You looked, you danced, 'you spoke—every thing charmed me.'

'Good heavens!' cries Booth, 'is it possible 'you should do me so much unmerited honour, 'and I should be dunce enough not to perceive 'the least symptom!'

'I assure you,' answered she, 'I did all I could 'to prevent you; and yet I almost hated you for 'not seeing through what I strove to hide. Why, 'Mr. Booth, was you not more quick-sighted?—'I will answer for you—your affections were more 'happily disposed of to a much better woman 'than myself, whom you married soon afterwards. 'I should ask you for her, Mr. Booth; I should 'have asked you for her before; but I am unworthy of asking for her, or of calling her my 'acquaintance.'

Booth stopt her short, as she was running into another fit of passion, and begged her to omit all former matters, and acquaint him with that part of her history to which he was an entire stranger.

She then renewed her discourse as follows: 'You know, Mr. Booth, I soon afterwards left 'that town, upon the death of my grandmother, 'and returned home to my father's house; where I 'had not been long arrived before some troops of 'dragoons came to quarter in our neighbourhood. 'Among the officers, there was a cornet, whose 'detested name was Hebbers, a name I could 'scarce repeat, had I not at the same time the 'pleasure to reflect that he is now no more. My

'father, you know, who is a hearty well-wisher to 'the present government, used always to invite the 'officers to his house; so did he these. Nor was 'it long before this cornet, in so particular a 'manner recommended himself to the poor old 'gentleman (I cannot think of him without tears), 'that our house became his principal habitation; 'and he was rarely at his quarters, unless when 'his superior officers obliged him to be there. I 'shall say nothing of his person, nor could that 'be any recommendation to a man; it was such 'however as no woman could have made an ob-'jection to. Nature had certainly wrapt up her 'odious work in a most beautiful covering. To 'say the truth, he was the handsomest man, ex-'cept one only, that I ever saw—I assure you, I 'have seen a handsomer——but—well.—He had 'besides all the qualifications of a gentleman: was 'genteel, and extremely polite; spoke French 'well, and danced to a miracle; but what chiefly 'recommended him to my father, was his skill in 'music, of which you know that dear man was the 'most violent lover. I wish he was not too sus-'ceptible of flattery on that head; for I have heard 'Hebbers often greatly commend my father's per-'formance, and have observed that the good man 'was wonderfully pleased with such commenda-'tions. To say the truth, it is the only way I 'can account for the extraordinary friendship 'which my father conceived for this person; such 'a friendship, that he at last became a part of our 'family.

'This very circumstance, which as I am con-'vinced, strongly recommended him to my father, 'had the very contrary effect with me; I had 'never any delight in music, and it was not with-'out much difficulty I was prevailed on to learn

'to play on the harpsichord, in which I had made 'a very slender progress. As this man, therefore, 'was frequently the occasion of my being impor- 'tuned to play against my will, I began to enter- 'tain some dislike for him on that account; and 'as to his person, I assure you, I long continued 'to look on it with great indifference.

'How strange will the art of this man ap- 'pear to you presently, who had sufficient address 'to convert that very circumstance which had at 'first occasioned my dislike, into the first seeds of 'affection for him.

'You have often, I believe, heard my sister 'Betty play on the harpsichord; she was, indeed 'reputed the best performer in the whole country.

'I was the farthest in the world from regarding 'this perfection of her's with envy. In reality, 'perhaps, I despised all perfection of this kind; 'at least, as I had neither skill nor ambition to 'excel this way, I looked upon it as a matter of 'mere indifference.

'Hebbers first put this emulation in my head. 'He took great pains to persuade me, that I had 'much greater abilities of the musical kind than my 'sister; and that I might with the greatest ease, 'if I pleased, excel her; offering me, at the same 'time, his assistance if I would resolve to under- 'take it.

'When he had sufficiently inflamed my ambi- 'tion, in which, perhaps, he found too little dif- 'ficulty, the continual praises of my sister, which 'before I had disregarded, became more and more 'nauseous in my ears; and the rather, as music 'being the favourite passion of my father, I became 'apprehensive (not without frequent hints from 'Hebbers of that nature) that she might gain too 'great a preference in his favour.

'To my harpsichord then I applied myself night 'and day, with such industry and attention, that 'I soon began to perform in a tolerable manner. 'I do not absolutely say I excelled my sister, for 'many were of a different opinion; but, indeed, 'there might be some partiality in all that.

'Hebbers, at least, declared himself on my side, 'and nobody could doubt his judgment. He as-'serted openly, that I played in the better man-'ner of the two; and one day when I was playing 'to him alone, he affected to burst into a rapture 'of admiration, and squeezing me gently by the 'hand, said, There, madam, I now declare you 'excel your sister as much in music, as, added he, 'in a whispering sigh, you do her, and all the 'world, in every other charm.

'No woman can bear any superiority in what-'ever thing she desires to excel in. I now began 'to hate all the admirers of my sister, to be uneasy 'at every commendation bestowed on her skill in 'music, and consequently to love Hebbers for the 'preference which he gave to mine.

'It was now that I began to survey the hand-'some person of Hebbers with pleasure. And 'here, Mr. Booth, I will betray to you the grand 'secret of our sex.——Many women, I believe, 'do, with great innocence, and even with great 'indifference, converse with men of the finest 'persons; but this I am confident may be affirmed 'with truth, that, when once a woman comes to 'ask this question of herself; Is the man whom I 'like for some other reason, handsome? her fate 'and his too, very strongly depend on her an-'swering in the affirmative.

'Hebbers no sooner perceived that he made an 'impression on my heart, of which, I am satisfied 'I gave him too undeniable tokens, than he affect-

'ed, on a sudden, to shun me in the most apparent 'manner. He wore the most melancholy air in my 'presence, and, by his dejected looks and sighs, 'firmly persuaded me, that there was some secret 'sorrow labouring in his bosom; nor will it be 'difficult for you to imagine to what cause I im'puted it.

'Whilst I was wishing for his declaration of a 'passion in which I thought I could not be mis'taken, and, at the same time trembling, when'ever we met, with the apprehension of this very 'declaration, the widow Carey came from London 'to make us a visit, intending to stay the whole 'summer at our house.

'Those who know Mrs. Carey, will scarce think 'I do her an injury, in saying, she is far from being 'handsome; and yet she is as finished a coquette 'as if she had the highest beauty to support that 'character. But, perhaps, you have seen her; 'and, if you have, I am convinced you will rea'dily subscribe to my opinion.'

Booth answered, he had not; and then she proceeded as in the following chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

The History of Miss Matthews continued.

'THIS young lady had not been three days 'with us, before Hebbers grew so particular with 'her, that it was generally observed; and my poor 'father, who, I believe, loved the cornet as if 'he had been his son, began to jest on the oc'casion, as one who would not be displeased at

'throwing a good jointure into the arms of his 'friend.

'You will easily guess, Sir, the disposition of my 'mind on this occasion; but I was not permitted 'to suffer long under it; for one day, when Heb'bers was alone with me, he took an opportunity 'of expressing his abhorrence at the thoughts of 'marrying for interest, contrary to his inclinations. 'I was warm on the subject, and, I believe, went 'so far as to say, that none but fools and villains 'did so. He replied, with a sigh, Yes, madam, 'but what would you think of a man whose heart 'is all the while bleeding for another woman, to 'whom he would willingly sacrifice the world; 'but, because he must sacrifice her interest as well 'as his own, never durst even give her a hint of 'that passion which was preying on his very vitals? 'Do you believe, Miss Fanny, there is such a 'wretch on earth? I answered, with an assumed 'coldness, I did not believe there was. He then 'took me gently by the hand, and, with a look 'so tender, that I cannot describe it, vowed he was 'himself that wretch. Then starting, as if con'scious of an error committed, he cried with a 'faultering voice, What am I saying? pardon me, 'Miss Fanny; since I only beg your pity, I never 'will ask for more.—At these words, hearing my 'father coming up, I betrayed myself entirely, if 'indeed, I had not done it before. I hastily with'drew my hand, crying, Hush! for heaven's sake, 'my father is just coming in; my blushes, my 'look, and my accent telling him, I suppose, all 'which he wished to know.

'A few days now brought matters to an eclair'cissement between us; the being undeceived in 'what had given me so much uneasiness, gave me a 'pleasure too sweet to be resisted. To triumph

'over the widow, for whom I had, in a very short 'time, contracted a most inveterate hatred, was a 'pride not to be described. Hebbers appeared to 'me to be the cause of all this happiness. I doubt-'ed not but that he had the most disinterested 'passion for me, and thought him every way wor-'thy of its return. I did return it, and accepted 'him as my lover.

'He declared the greatest apprehensions of my 'father's suspicion, though I am convinced these 'were causeless, had his designs been honourable. 'To blind these, I consented that he should carry 'on sham addresses to the widow, who was now a 'constant jest between us, and he pretended, from 'time to time, to acquaint me faithfully with every 'thing that past at his interviews with her; nor was 'this faithless woman wanting in her part of the 'deceit. She carried herself to me all the while 'with a shew of affection, and pretended to have 'the utmost friendship for me. But such are the 'friendships of women!'

At this remark, Booth, though enough affected at some parts of the story, had great difficulty to refrain from laughter; but, by good luck, he escaped being perceived; and the lady went on without interruption.

'I am come now to a part of my narrative in 'which it is impossible to be particular, without 'being tedious; for as to the commerce between 'lovers, it is, I believe, much the same in all 'cases; and there is, perhaps, scarce a single 'phrase that hath not been repeated ten millions 'of times.

'One thing, however, as I strongly remarked it 'then, so I will repeat it to you now. In all our 'conversations, in moments when he fell into the 'warmest raptures, and expressed the greatest un-

'easiness at the delay of his joys, he seldom mentioned the word Marriage; and never once solicited a day for that purpose. Indeed, women cannot be cautioned too much against such lovers; for though I have heard, and perhaps truly, of some of our sex, of a virtue so exalted, that it is proof against every temptation; yet the generality, I am afraid, are too much in the power of a man to whom they have owned an affection. What is called being upon a good footing, is, perhaps, being upon a very dangerous one; and a woman who hath given her consent to marry, can hardly be said to be safe till she is married.

'And now, Sir, I hasten to the period of my ruin. We had a wedding in our family; my musical sister was married to a young fellow as musical as herself. Such a match, you may be sure, amongst other festivities, must have a ball. Oh! Mr. Booth, shall modesty forbid me to remark to you what past on that occasion? But why do I mention modesty, who have no pretensions to it? Every thing was said and practised, on that occasion, as if the purpose had been to inflame the mind of every woman present. That effect I freely own to you, it had with me. Music, dancing, wine, and the most luscious conversation, in which my poor dear father innocently joined, raised ideas in me of which I shall for ever repent; and I wished (why should I deny it?) that it had been my wedding instead of my sister's.

'The villain Hebbers danced with me that night, and he lost no opportunity of improving the occasion. In short, the dreadful evening came. My father, though it was a very unusual thing with him, grew intoxicated with liquor; most of the men were in the same condition, nay, I myself

'drank more than I was accustomed to, enough 'to inflame, though not to disorder. I lost my 'former bed-fellow, my sister, and,—you may, 'I think, guess the rest,—the villain found means 'to steal to my chamber, and I was undone.

'Two months I passed in this detested com-'merce, buying, even then, my guilty, half-tasted 'pleasures at too dear a rate, with continual hor-'ror and apprehension; but what have I paid since, 'what do I pay now, Mr. Booth? O may my fate 'be a warning to every woman to keep her inno-'cence, to resist every temptation, since she is 'certain to repent of the foolish bargain. May it 'be a warning to her to deal with mankind with 'care and caution; to shun the least approaches 'of dishonour, and never to confide too much in 'the honesty of a man, nor in her own strength, 'where she has so much at stake; let her remem-'ber she walks on a precipice, and the bottomless 'pit is to receive her, if she slips; nay, if she 'makes but one false step.

'I ask your pardon, Mr. Booth, I might have 'spared these exhortations, since no woman hears 'me; but you will not wonder at seeing me af-'fected on this occasion.'

Booth declared he was much more surprised at her being able so well to preserve her temper in recounting her story.

'O Sir,' answered she, 'I am at length recon-'ciled to my fate; and I can now die with plea-'sure, since I die revenged. I am not one of those 'mean wretches who can sit down and lament their 'misfortunes. If I ever shed tears, they are the 'tears of indignation—but I will proceed.

'It was my fate now to solicit marriage; and I 'failed not to do it in the most earnest manner. 'He answered me at first with procrastinations,

'declaring, from time to time, he would mention 'it to my father; and still excusing himself for not 'doing it. At last, he thought on an expedient to 'obtain a longer reprieve. This was by pretend-'ing, that he should, in a very few weeks, be 'preferred to the command of a troop; and then 'he said, he could, with some confidence, pro-'pose the match.

'In this delay, I was persuaded to acquiesce; 'and was indeed pretty easy; for I had not yet 'the least mistrust of his honour; but what words 'can paint my sensations! when one morning he 'came into my room, with all the marks of de-'jection in his countenance, and throwing an open 'letter on the table, said, There is news, madam, 'in that letter which I am unable to tell you; 'nor can it give you more concern than it hath 'given me.

'This letter was from his captain, to acquaint 'him, that the rout, as they call it, was arrived, 'and that they were to march within two days. 'And this, I am since convinced, was what he ex-'pected, instead of the preferment which had been 'made the pretence of delaying our marriage.

'The shock which I felt at reading this was 'inexpressible, occasioned indeed principally by 'the departure of a villain whom I loved. However, 'I soon acquired sufficient presence of mind to 'remember the main point; and I now insisted 'peremptorily on his making me immediately his 'wife, whatever might be the consequence.

'He seemed thunderstruck at this proposal, be-'ing I suppose, destitute of any excuse: but I was 'too impatient to wait for an answer, and cried 'out with much eagerness, Sure you cannot hesi-'tate a moment upon this matter——Hesitate! 'madam! replied he—what you ask is impossible

'—is this a time for me to mention a thing of this 'kind to your father?—My eyes were now opened 'all at once—I fell into a rage little short of mad'ness. Tell not me, I cried, of impossibilities, 'nor times, nor of my father,———my honour, 'my reputation, my all are at stake.—I will have 'no excuse, no delay—make me your wife this 'instant, or I will proclaim you over the face of 'the whole earth for the greatest of villains.—'He answered, with a kind of sneer, What will 'you proclaim, madam?—whose honour will you 'injure? My tongue faltered when I offered to 'reply, and I fell into a violent agony, which 'ended in a fit; nor do I remember any thing 'more that past, till I found myself in the arms 'of my poor affrighted father.

'O Mr. Booth! what was then my situation. 'I tremble even now from the reflection.—I must 'stop a moment. I can go no farther.' Booth attempted all in his power to sooth her; and she soon recovered her powers, and proceeded in her story.

CHAP. IX.

In which Miss Matthews concludes her Relation.

'BEFORE I had recovered my senses, I had 'sufficiently betrayed myself to the best of men, 'who, instead of upbraiding me, or exerting any 'anger, endeavoured to comfort me all he could, 'with assurances that all should yet be well. This 'goodness of his affected me with inexpressible 'sensations; I prostrated myself before him, em-

" braced and kissed his knees, and almost dissolved
' in tears, and a degree of tenderness hardly to be
' conceived——But I am running into too minute
' descriptions.

' Hebbers, seeing me in a fit, had left me, and
' sent one of the servants to take care of me. He
' then ran away like a thief from the house, with-
' out taking his leave of my father, or once thank-
' ing him for all his civilities. He did not stop at
' his quarters, but made directly to London, appre-
' hensive, I believe, either of my father or brother's
' resentment; for I am convinced he is a coward.
' Indeed his fear of my brother was utterly ground-
' less; for I believe he would rather have thanked
' any man who had destroyed me; and I am sure I
' am not in the least behind-hand with him in good
' wishes.

' All his inveteracy to me, had, however, no
' effect on my father, at least at that time? for
' though the good man took sufficient occasions,
' to reprimand me for my past offence, he could
' not be brought to abandon me. A treaty of
' marriage was now set on foot, in which my
' father himself offered me to Hebbers, with a for-
' tune superior to that which had been given with
' my sister: nor could all my brother's remon-
' strances against it, as an act of the highest injus-
' tice, avail.

' Hebbers entered into the treaty, though not
' with much warmth. He had even the assurance
' to make additional demands on my father, which
' being complied with, every thing was concluded,
' and the villain once more received into the house.
' He soon found means to obtain my forgiveness of
' his former behaviour; indeed, he convinced me,
' so foolishly blind is female love, that he had never
' been to blame.

'When every thing was ready for our nuptials, 'and the day of the ceremony was to be appointed, 'in the midst of my happiness, I received a letter 'from an unknown hand, acquainting me (guess, 'Mr. Booth, how I was shocked at receiving it) 'that Mr. Hebbers was already married to a wo-'man, in a distant part of the kingdom.

'I will not tire you with all that past at our next 'interview. I communicated the letter to Heb-'bers, who after some lit.le hesitation, owned the 'fact, and not only owned it, but had the address 'to improve it to his own advantage, to make it 'the means of satisfying me concerning all his for-'mer delays; which, to say the truth, I was not 'so much displeased at imputing to any degree of 'villany, as I should have been to impute it to the 'want of a sufficient warmth of affection; and 'though the disappointment of all my hopes, at 'the very instant of their expected fruition, threw 'me into the most violent disorders; yet, when I 'came a little to myself, he had no great difficulty 'to persuade me that in every intance, with regard 'to me, Hebbers, had acted from no other motive 'than from the most ardent and ungovernable 'love. And there is, I believe, no crime which a 'woman will not forgive, when she can derive it 'from that fountain. In short, I forgave him all, 'and am willing to persuade myself I am not 'weaker than the rest of my sex. Indeed, Mr. 'Booth, he hath a bewitching tongue, and is master 'of an address that no woman could resist. I do 'assure you, the charms of his person are his least 'perfection, at least in my eye.'

Here Booth smiled, but happily without her perceiving it.

'A fiesh difficulty (continued she) now arose. 'This was to excuse the delay of the ceremony to

'my father, who every day very earnestly urged it. 'This made me so very uneasy, that I at last listen-'ed to a proposal, which, if any one, in the days 'of my innocence, or even a few days before, 'had assured me I could have submitted to have 'thought of, I should have treated the supposition 'with the highest contempt and indignation; nay, 'I scarce reflect on it now with more horror than 'astonishment. In short, I agreed to run away 'with him. To leave my father, my reputation, 'every thing which was or ought to have been 'dear to me, and to live with this villain as a mis-'tress, since I could not be his wife.

'Was not this an obligation of the highest and 'tenderest kind, and had I not reason to expect 'every return in the man's power on whom I had 'conferred it?

'I will make short of the remainder of my story, 'for what is there of a woman worth relating, after 'what I have told you?

'Above a year I lived with this man in an ob-'scure court in London, during which time I had 'a child by him, whom Heaven, I thank it, hath 'been pleased to take to itself.

'During many months he behaved to me with 'all the apparent tenderness, and even fondness 'imaginable; but, alas! how poor was my enjoy-'ment of this, compared to what it would have 'been in another situation? When he was present, 'life was barely tolerable; but when he was ab-'sent, nothing could equal the misery I endured. 'I passed my hours almost entirely alone; for no 'company, but what I despised would consort 'with me. Abroad, I scarce ever went, lest I 'should meet any of my former acquaintance; 'for their sight would have plunged a thousand 'daggers in my soul. My only diversion was

'going very seldom to a play, where I hid myself 'in the gallery, with a daughter of the woman of 'the house. A girl, indeed, of good sense, and 'many good qualities; but how much beneath me 'was it to be the companion of a creature so low! 'O heavens! when I have seen my equals glitter- 'ing in a side-box, how have the thoughts of my 'lost honour torn my soul!'

'Pardon me, dear madam,' cries Booth, 'for 'interrupting you; but I am under the utmost 'anxiety to know what became of your poor 'father, for whom I have so great a respect, and 'who I am convinced, must so bitterly feel your 'loss.'

'O Mr. Booth,' answered she, 'he was scarce 'ever out of my thoughts. His dear image still 'obtruded itself in my mind, and I believe would 'have broken my heart, had I not taken a very 'preposterous way to ease myself. I am, indeed, 'almost ashamed to tell you; but necessity put 'it in my head.—You will think the matter too 'trifling to have been remembered, and so it surely 'was; nor should I have remembered it on any 'other occasion. You must know then, Sir, 'that my brother was always my inveterate enemy, 'and altogether as fond of my sister. He once 'prevailed with my father to let him take my 'sister with him in the chariot, and by that means 'I was disappointed of going to a ball which I 'had set my heart on. The disappointment, I 'assure you, was great at the time; but I had 'long since forgotten it. I must have been a 'very bad woman, if I had not; for it was the 'only thing in which I can remember that my 'father ever disobliged me. However, I now re- 'vived this in my mind, which I artificially 'worked up into so high an injury, that I assure

'you it afforded me no little comfort. When 'any tender idea intruded into my bosom, I im-'mediately raised this phantom of an injury in 'my imagination, and it considerably lessened the 'fury of that sorrow which I should have other-'wise felt for the loss of so good a father; who 'died within a few months of my departure from 'him.

'And now, Sir, to draw to a conclusion. One 'night as I was in the gallery at Drury-Lane 'playhouse, I saw below me, in a side-box—— '(she was once below me in every place), that 'widow whom I mentioned to you before——I 'had scarce cast my eyes on this woman, before 'I was so shocked with the sight, that it almost 'deprived me of my senses; for the villain Heb-'bers came presently in, and seated himself be-'hind her.

'He had been almost a month from me, and I 'believed him to be at his quarters in Yorkshire. 'Guess what were my sensations, when I beheld 'him sitting by that base woman, and talking to 'her with the utmost familiarity. I could not long 'endure this sight; and having acquainted my 'companion that I was taken suddenly ill, I forced 'her to go home with me at the end of the second 'act.

'After a restless and sleepless night, when I 'rose the next morning, I had the comfort to re-'ceive a visit from the woman of the house, who 'after a very short introduction, asked me when 'I had heard from the captain, and when I ex-'pected to see him? I had not strength or spirits 'to make her any answer; and she proceeded 'thus: Indeed I did not think the captain would 'have used me so. My husband was an officer of 'the army, as well as himself; and if a body is a

'little low in the world, I am sure that is no rea-
'son for folks to trample on a body. I defy
'the world to say as I ever was guilty of an ill
'thing. For heaven's sake, Madam, says I, what
'do you mean? Mean! cries she, I am sure if I
'had not thought you had been captain Hebbers's
'lady, his lawful lady too, you should never have
'set footing in my house. I would have captain
'Hebbers know, that though I am reduced to let
'lodgings, I never have entertained any but per-
'sons of character.—In this manner, Sir, she ran
'on, saying many shocking things not worth re-
'peating, till my anger at last got the better of my
'patience as well as my sorrow, and I pushed her
'out of the room.

'She had not been long gone before her daughter
'came to me, and after many expressions of ten-
'derness and pity acquainted me, that her mother
'had just found out, by means of the captain's ser-
'vant, that the captain was married to another
'lady; which, if you did not know before, madam,
'said she, I am sorry to be the messenger of such
'ill news.

'Think, Mr. Booth, what I must have endured
'to see myself humbled before such a creature as
'this, the daughter of a woman who lets lodgings!
'However, having recollected myself a little, I
'thought it would be in vain to deny any thing;
'so knowing this to be one of the best natured,
'and most sensible girls in the world, I resolved
'to tell her my whole story, and for the future to
'make her my confidante. I answered her, there-
'fore, with a good deal of assurance, that she
'need not regret telling me this piece of ill-news,
'for I had known it before I came to her house.

'Pardon me, madam,' replied the girl, 'you
'cannot possibly have known it so long; for he

'hath not been married above a week: last night 'was the first time of his appearing in public with 'his wife at the play. Indeed, I knew very well 'the cause of your uneasiness there; but would 'not mention——

'His wife at the play!' answered I eagerly, 'what wife! whom do you mean?'

'I mean the widow Carey, madam,' replied she, 'to whom the captain was married a few days 'since. His servant was here last night to pay for 'your lodging; and he told it my mother.

'I know not what answer I made, or whether I 'made any; I presently fell dead on the floor, and 'it was with great difficulty I was brought back 'to life by the poor girl; for neither the mother, 'nor the maid of the house, would lend me any 'assistance, both seeming to regard me rather as 'a monster than a woman.

'Scarce had I recovered the use of my senses, 'when I received a letter from the villain, declar'ing he had not the assurance to see my face, and 'very kindly advising me to endeavour to recon'cile myself to my family; concluding with an 'offer, in case I did not succeed, to allow me 'twenty pounds a year to support me in some re'mote part of the kingdom.

'I need not mention my indignation at these 'proposals. In the highest agony of rage, I went 'in a chair to the detested house, where I easily 'got access to the wretch I had devoted to de'struction, whom I no sooner found within my 'reach, than I plunged a drawn penknife, which 'I had prepared in my pocket for that purpose, into 'his accursed heart. For this fact, I was immedi'ately seized, and soon after committed hither; 'and for this fact I am ready to die, and shall, 'with pleasure, receive the sentence of the law.

'Thus, Sir,' said she, 'I have related to you my 'unhappy story; and if I have tired your patience, 'by dwelling too long on those parts which af- 'fected me the most, I ask your pardon.'

Booth made a proper speech on this occasion, and having expressed much concern at her present situation, concluded, that he hoped her sentence would be milder than she seemed to expect.

Her reply to this was full of so much bitterness and indignation, that we do not think proper to record the speech at length; in which, having vented her passion, she all at once put on a serene countenance, and, with an air of great complacency, said, 'Well, Mr. Booth, I think I have now 'a right to satisfy my curiosity, at the expense of 'your breath. I may say it is not altogether a 'vain curiosity; for perhaps I have had inclina- 'tion enough to interest myself in whatever con- 'cerns you; but no matter for that— those days '(added she with a sigh) are now over.'

Booth, who was extremely good-natured and well-bred, told her, that she should not command him twice whatever was in his power; and then, after the usual apology, was going to begin his history, when the keeper arrived, and acquainted the lady that dinner was ready, at the same time saying, 'I suppose, Madam, as the gentleman is 'an acquaintance of your's, he must dine with us 'too.'

Miss Matthews told the keeper, that she had only one word to mention in private to the gentleman, and that then they would both attend him. —She then pulled her purse from her pocket, in which were upwards of twenty guineas, being the remainder of the money for which she had sold a gold repeating watch, her father's present, with some other trinkets, and desired Mr. Booth to take

what he should have occasion for; saying, 'You 'know, I believe, dear Will, I never valued money; 'and now I am sure I shall have very little use 'for it.' Booth, with much difficulty, accepted of two guineas; and then they both together attended the keeper.

CHAP. X.

Table-talk, consisting of a facetious Discourse that passed in the Prison.

THERE were assembled at the table the governor of these (not improperly called infernal) regions; the lieutenant-governor, vulgarly named first turnkey; Miss Matthews, Mr. Booth, Mr. Robinson the gambler; several other prisoners of both sexes; and one Murphy an attorney.

The governor took the first opportunity to bring the affair of Miss Matthews upon the carpet, and then turning to Murphy, he said, 'It is very 'lucky this gentleman happens to be present; I 'do assure you, Madam, your cause cannot be in 'abler hands. He is, I believe, the best man in 'England at a defence; I have known him often 'succeed against the most positive evidence.'

'Fy, Sir,' answered Murphy, 'you know I hate 'all this; but if the lady will trust me with her 'cause, I will do the best in my power. Come, 'Madam, do not be discouraged; a bit of man-'slaughter and cold iron, I hope, will be the 'worst: or, perhaps we may come off better, with 'a slice of chance-medely, or *se defendendo*.'

'I am very ignorant of the law, Sir,' cries the lady.

'Yes, Madam,' answered Murphy, 'it cannot 'be expected you should understand it. There 'are very few of us who profess it, that under'stand the whole; nor is it necessary we should. 'There is a great deal of rubbish of little use, 'about indictments, and abatements, and bars, 'and ejectment, and trovers, and such stuff, with 'which people cram their heads to little purpose. 'The chapter of evidence is the main business; 'that is the sheet anchor; that is the rudder, 'which brings the vessel safe *in portum*. Evi'dence is, indeed, the whole, the *summa totidis*, 'for *de non apparentibus et non insislentibus eadem* '*est ratio*.'

'If you address yourself to me, Sir,' said the lady, 'you are much too learned, I assure you, 'for my understanding.'

'*Toce*, Madam,' answered Murphy, 'is Latin 'for a candle: I commend your prudence. I shall 'know the particulars of your case when we are 'alone.'

'I hope the lady,' said Robinson, 'hath no sus'picion of any person here, I hope we are all per'sons of honour at this table.'

'D—n my eyes!' answered a well-dressed woman, 'I can answer for myself and the other ladies; 'though I never saw the lady in my life, she need 'not be shy of us, d—n my eyes! I scorn to rap* 'against any lady.'

'D—n me Madam!' cried another female, 'I 'honour what you have done. I once put a knife 'into a cull myself—so my service to you, Madam, 'and I wish you may come off with *se diffidendo* 'with all my heart.'

'I beg, good woman,' said Miss Matthews,

* A cant word, meaning to swear, or rather to perjure yourself.

'you would talk on some other subject, and give 'yourself no concern about my affairs.'

'. You see, ladies,' cried Murphy, 'the gentle-'woman doth not care to talk on this matter be-'fore company; so pray do not press her.'

'Nay, I value the lady's acquaintance no more 'than she does mine,' cries the first woman who spoke——'I have kept as good company as the 'lady, I believe, every day in the week. Good 'woman! I do not use to be so treated—If the 'lady says such another word to me, d—n me 'I will darken her daylights. Marry, come up, 'good woman!—the lady's a whore as well as 'myself; and though I am sent hither to mill-'doll, d—n my eyes, I have money enough to buy 'it off as well as the lady herself.'

Action might perhaps soon have ensued this speech, had not the keeper interposed his authority, and put an end to any further dispute. Soon after which the company broke up; and none but himself, Mr. Murphy, Captain Booth, and Miss Matthews remained together.

Miss Matthews then, at the entreaty of the keeper, began to open her case to Mr. Murphy, whom she admitted to be her solicitor, though she still declared she was indifferent as to the event of the trial.

Mr. Murphy having heard all the particulars with which the reader is already acquainted (as far as related to the murder), shook his head and said, 'There is but one circumstance, Madam, 'which I wish was out of the case; and that we 'must put out of it; I mean the carrying the pen-'knife drawn into the room with you; for that 'seems to imply malice prepensive, as we call it in 'the law: this circumstance, therefore, must not 'appear against you; and if the servant who was

'in the room observed this, he must be bought 'off at all hazards. All here, you say, are friends; 'therefore, I tell you openly, you must furnish me 'with money sufficient for this purpose. Malice 'is all we have to guard against.'

'I would not presume, Sir,' cries Booth, 'to in-'form you in the law; but I have heard in case 'of stabbing, a man may be indicted upon the 'statute; and it is capital, though no malice ap-'pears.'

'You say, true, Sir,' answered Murphy; 'a 'man may be indicted *contra formam statutis*; and 'that method, I allow you, requires no malice. I 'presume you are a lawyer, Sir?'

'No, indeed, Sir,' answered Booth, 'I know 'nothing of the law.'

'Then, Sir, I will tell you—If a man be in-'dicted *contra formam statutis*, as we say, no 'malice is necessary; because the form of the 'statute makes malice; and then what we have 'to guard against, is having struck the first blow '—Pox on't, it is unlucky this was done in a room '—If it had been in the street, we could have had 'five or six witnesses to have proved the first blow, 'cheaper than I am afraid we shall get this one; 'for when a man knows, from the unhappy cir-'cumstances of the case, that you can procure no 'other witness but himself, he is always dear. It 'is so in all other ways of business—I am very im-'plicit, you see; but we are all among friends. 'The safest way is to furnish me with money 'enough to offer him a good round sum at once; 'and, I think, (it is for your good I speak) fifty 'pounds is the least that can be offered him.—I 'do assure you, I would offer him no less, was 'it my own case.'

'And do you think, Sir,' said she, 'that I

'would save my life at the expense of hiring another to perjure himself?'

'Ay, surely do I,' cries Murphy; 'for where is the fault, admitting there is some fault in perjury as you call it; and to be sure, it is such a matter as every man should rather wish to avoid than not: and yet, as it may be managed, there is not so much as some people are apt to imagine in it; for he need not kiss the book, and then pray where is the perjury? but if the crier is sharper than ordinary, what is it he kisses? is it any thing but a bit of calves-skin? I am sure a man must be a very bad Christian himself, who would not do so much as that to save the life of any Christian whatever, much more of so pretty a lady—Indeed, Madam, if we can make out but a tolerable case, so much beauty will go a great way with the judge and the jury too.'

The latter part of this speech, notwithstanding the mouth it came from, caused Miss Matthews to suppress much of the indignation which began to arise at the former; and she answered with a smile, 'Sir, you are a great casuist in these matters; but we need argue no longer concerning them; for if fifty pounds would save my life, I assure you, I could not command that sum. The little money I have in my pocket is all I can call my own; and, I apprehend, in the situation I am in, I shall have very little of that to spare.'

'Come, come, Madam,' cries Murphy, 'life is sweet, let me tell you, and never sweeter than when we are near losing it. I have known many a man very brave and undaunted at his first commitment, who, when business began to thicken a little upon him, hath changed his note—It is no time to be saving in your condition.'

The keeper, who, after the liberality of Miss Matthews, and on seeing a purse of guineas in her hand, had conceived a great opinion of her wealth, no sooner heard that the sum which he had in intention entirely confiscated for his own use, was attempted to be broke in upon, thought it high time to be upon his guard. 'To be sure,' cries he, 'Mr. Murphy, life is sweet, as you say, that must 'be acknowledged; to be sure life is sweet; but 'sweet as it is, no person can advance more than 'they are worth to save it. And indeed, if the 'lady can command no more money than that lit-'tle she mentions, she is to be commended for her 'unwillingness to part with any of it; for, to be 'sure, as she says, she will want every farthing of 'that, to live like a gentlewoman till she comes to 'her trial. And, to be sure, as sweet as life is, 'people ought to take care to be able to live sweetly 'while they do live; besides, I cannot help say-'ing, the lady shews herself to be what she is, by 'her abhorrence of perjury, which is certainly a 'very dreadful crime. And, though the not kiss-'ing the book doth, as you say, make a great 'deal of difference; and if a man had a great while 'to live and repent, perhaps he might swallow it 'well enough; yet, when people comes to be near 'their end (as who can venture to foretel what 'will be the lady's case!) they ought to take care 'not to overburthen their conscience. I hope the 'lady's case will not be found murder; for I am 'sure I always wish well to all my prisoners, who 'shew themselves to be gentlemen, or gentlewomen; 'yet one should always fear the worst.'

'Indeed, Sir, you speak like an oracle,' answered the lady; 'and one subornation of perjury would 'sit heavier on my conscience, than twenty such 'murders as I am guilty of.'

'Nay, to be sure, Madam,' answered the keeper, 'no body can pretend to tell what provocation 'you must have had; and certainly it can never 'be imagined, that a lady who behaves herself so 'handsomely as you have done ever since you 'have been under my keys, should be guilty of 'killing a man without being very highly provoked 'to do it.'

Mr. Murphy was, I believe, going to answer, when he was called out of the room; after which nothing passed between the remaining persons worth relating, till Booth and the lady retired back again into the lady's apartment.

Here they fell immediately to commenting on the foregoing discourse; but as their comments were, I believe, the same with what most readers have made on the same occasion, we shall omit them. At last, Miss Matthews reminding her companion of his promise of relating to her what had befallen him since the interruption of their former acquaintance, he began as is written in the next book of this history.

AMELIA.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

In which Captain Booth begins to relate his History.

THE tea-table being removed, and Mr. Booth and the lady left alone, he proceeded as follows:

'Since you desire, Madam, to know the par-
'ticulars of my courtship to that best and dearest
'of women, whom I afterwards married; I will en-
'deavour to recollect them as well as I can, at least
'all those incidents which are most worth relating
'to you.

'If the vulgar opinion of the fatality in marriage
'had ever any foundation, it surely appeared in
'my marriage with my Amelia. I knew her in the
'first dawn of her beauty; and, I believe, Madam,
'she had as much as ever fell to the share of a
'woman; but though I always admired her, it
'was long without any spark of love. Perhaps
'the general admiration which at that time pur-
'sued her, the respect paid her by persons of the
'highest rank, and the numberless addresses which
'were made her by men of great fortune, prevented

'my aspiring at the possession of those charms 'which seemed so absolutely out of my reach. 'However it was, I assure you the accident which 'deprived her of the admiration of others, made the 'first great impression on my heart in her favour. 'The injury done to her beauty by the overturning 'of a chaise, by which, as you may well remem-'ber, her lovely nose was beat all to pieces, gave 'me an assurance that the woman who had been so 'much adored for the charms of her person, de-'served a much higher adoration to be paid to her 'mind: for that she was in the latter respect, infi-'nitely more superior to the rest of her sex, than 'she had ever been in the former.'

'I admire your taste extremely,' cried the lady; 'I remember perfectly well the great heroism with 'which your Amelia bore that misfortune.'

'Good heavens! Madam,' answered he, 'what 'a magnanimity of mind did her behaviour demon-'strate! if the world have extolled the firmness of 'soul in a man who can support the loss of fortune; 'of a general, who can be composed after the loss 'of a victory; or of a king, who can be contented 'with the loss of a crown; with what astonishment 'ought we to behold, with what praises to honour, 'a young lady, who can, with patience and resig-'nation, submit to the loss of exquisite beauty; in 'other words, to the loss of fortune, power, glory, 'every thing which human nature is apt to court 'and rejoice in! what must be the mind which can 'bear to be deprived of all these in a moment, and 'by an unfortunate trifling accident; which could 'support all this, together with the most exquisite 'torments of body, and with dignity, with resig-'nation, without complaining, almost without a 'tear, undergo the most painful and dreadful ope-'rations of surgery in such a situation!' Here he

stopt, and a torrent of tears gushed from his eyes; such tears as are apt to flow from a truly noble heart, at the hearing of any thing surprisingly great and glorious. As soon as he was able, he again proceeded thus:

'Would you think, Miss Matthews, that the misfortune of my Amelia was capable of any aggravation! I assure you, she hath often told me it was aggravated with a circumstance which outweighed all the other ingredients. This was the cruel insults she received from some of her most intimate acquaintance, several of whom, after many distortions and grimaces, have turned their heads aside, unable to support their secret triumph, and burst into a loud laugh in her hearing.'

'Good heaven!' cried Miss Matthews, 'what detestable actions will this contemptible passion of envy prevail on our sex to commit?'

'An occasion of this kind, as she hath since told me, made the first impression on her gentle heart in my favour. I was one day in company with several young ladies, or rather young devils, where poor Amelia's accident was the subject of much mirth and pleasantry. One of these said, she hoped Miss would not hold her head so high for the future. Another answered, I do not know, Madam, what she may do with her head, but I am convinced she will never more turn up her nose at her betters. Another cried, What a very proper match might now be made between Amelia and a certain captain, who had unfortunately received an injury in the same part, though from no shameful cause. Many other sarcasms were thrown out, very unworthy to be repeated. I was hurt with perceiving so much malice in human shape, and cried out very bluntly, Indeed, ladies, you need not express such satisfaction at poor Miss

'Emily's accident; for she will still be the hand-'somest woman in England. This speech of mine was 'afterwards variously repeated, by some to my ho-'nour, and by others represented in a contrary light; 'indeed, it was often reported to be much ruder 'than it was. However, it at length reached Ame-'lia's ears. She said she was very much obliged to 'me; since I could have so much compassion for 'her as to be rude to a lady on her account.

'About a month after the accident, when Ame-'lia began to see company in a mask, I had the ho-'nour to drink tea with her. We were alone to-'gether, and I begged her to indulge my curiosity 'by shewing me her face. She answered in a most 'obliging manner, "Perhaps, Mr. Booth, you will "as little know me when my mask is off, as when "it is on;" and at the same instant unmasked.—'The surgeon's skill was the least I considered. 'A thousand tender ideas rushed all at once on my 'mind. I was unable to contain myself, and 'eagerly kissing her hand, I cried,—Upon my 'soul, Madam, you never appeared to me so lovely 'as at this instant. Nothing more remarkable 'passed at this visit; but I sincerely believe we 'were neither of us hereafter indifferent to each 'other.

'Many months, however, passed after this, be-'fore I ever thought seriously of making her my 'wife. Not that I wanted sufficient love for Ame-'lia. Indeed it arose from the vast affection I bore 'her. I considered my own as a desperate fortune, 'her's as entirely dependent on her mother, who 'was a woman, you know, of violent passions, 'and very unlikely to consent to a match so highly 'contrary to the interest of her daughter. The 'more I loved Amelia, the more firmly I resolved 'within myself, never to propose love to her se-

'riously. Such a dupe was my understanding to 'my heart; and so foolishly did I imagine I could 'be master of a flame, to which I was every day 'adding fuel.

'O Miss Matthews! we have heard of men en-'tirely masters of their passions, and of hearts 'which can carry this fire in them, and conceal it 'at their pleasure. Perhaps there may be such; 'but if there are, those hearts may be compared, I 'believe, to damps, in which it is more difficult to 'keep fire alive than to prevent its blazing: In 'mine, it was placed in the midst of combustible 'matter.

'After several visits, in which looks and sighs 'had been interchanged on both sides, but with-'out the least mention of passion in private, one 'day the discourse between us, when alone, hap-'pened to turn on love; I say happened, for I 'protest it was not designed on my side, and I am 'as firmly convinced not on her's. I was now no 'longer master of myself; I declared myself the 'most wretched of all martyrs to this tender pas-'sion; that I had long concealed it from its ob-'ject. At length, after mentioning many particu-'lars, suppressing, however, those which must 'have necessarily brought it home to Amelia, I 'concluded with begging her to be the confidante 'of my amour, and to give me her advice on that 'occasion.

'Amelia (O I shall never forget the dear per-'turbation!) appeared all confusion at this instant. 'She trembled, turned pale, and discovered how 'well she understood me, by a thousand more 'symptoms than I could take notice of, in a state of 'mind so very little different from her own. At last, 'with faltering accents, she said, I had made a very 'ill choice of a counsellor, in a matter in which she

'was so ignorant.—Adding, at last, I believe, Mr.
'Booth, you gentlemen want very little advice in
'these affairs, which you all understand better than
'we do.

'I will relate no more of our conversation at
'present; indeed, I am afraid I tire you with too
'many particulars.'

'O no!' answered she; 'I should be glad to hear
'every step of an amour which had so tender a be-
'ginning. Tell me every thing you said or did, if
'you can remember it.'

He then proceeded, and so will we in the next chapter.

CHAP. II.

Mr. Booth continues his Story. In this Chapter there are some Passages that may serve as a kind of Touch-stone, by which a young Lady may examine the Heart of her Lover. I would advise, therefore, that every Lover be obliged to read it over in the Presence of his Mistress, and that she carefully watch his Emotions while he is reading.

'I WAS under the utmost concern,' cries Booth,
'when I retired from my visit, and had reflected
'coolly on what I had said. I now saw plainly that
'I had made downright love to Amelia; and I
'feared, such was my vanity, that I had already
'gone too far, and been too successful. Feared!
'do I say, could I fear what I hoped? how shall I
'describe the anxiety of my mind!'

'You need give yourself no great pain,' cried Miss Matthews, 'to describe what I can so easily

'guess. To be honest with you, Mr. Booth, I do 'not agree with your lady's opinion, that the men 'have a superior understanding in the matters of 'love. Men are often blind to the passions of wo- 'men: but every woman is as quick-sighted as a 'hawk on these occasions; nor is there one article 'in the whole science which is not understood by 'all our sex.'

'However, Madam,' said Mr. Booth, 'I now 'undertook to deceive Amelia. I abstained three 'days from seeing her; to say the truth, I endea- 'voured to work myself up to a resolution of leav- 'ing her for ever; but when I could not so far sub- 'due my passion——But why do I talk nonsense, 'of subduing passion? I should say, when no other 'passion could surmount my love, I returned to 'visit her, and now I attempted the strangest pro- 'ject which ever entered into the silly head of a lover. 'This was to persuade Amelia that I was really in 'love in another place, and had literally expressed 'my meaning, when I asked her advice, and desired 'her to be my confidante.

'I therefore forged a meeting to have been be- 'tween me and my imaginary mistress, since I had 'last seen Amelia, and related the particulars, as well 'as I could invent them, which had past at our 'conversation.

'Poor Amelia presently swallowed this bait; 'and, as she hath told me since, absolutely be- 'lieved me to be in earnest. Poor dear love! 'how should the sincerest of hearts have an idea 'of deceit? for with all her simplicity, I assure 'you she is the most sensible woman in the 'world.'

'It is highly generous and good in you,' (said Miss Matthews, with a sly sneer), 'to impute to

'honesty what others would, perhaps, call cre-'dulity.'

'I protest, Madam,' answered he, 'I do her no 'more than justice. A good heart will at all times 'betray the best head in the world.——Well, Ma-'dam, my angel was now, if possible, more con-'fused than before. She looked so silly, you can 'hardly believe it.'—

'Yes, yes, I can,' answered the lady with a laugh, 'I can believe it.—Well, well, go on.' 'After 'some hesitation,' cried he, 'my Amelia said faintly 'to me, "Mr. Booth, you use me very ill; you "desire me to be your confidante, and conceal from "me the name of your mistress."

'Is it possible then, Madam,' answered I, 'that 'you cannot guess her, when I tell you she is one 'of your acquaintance, and lives in this town?'

"My acquaintance!" said she, "La! Mr. "Booth,—In this town! I—I—I thought I could "have guessed for once; but I have an ill talent "that way—I will never attempt to guess any "thing again." 'Indeed, I do her an injury when 'I pretend to represent her manner. Her manner, 'look, voice, every thing was inimitable; such 'sweetness, softness, innocence, modesty.—Upon 'my soul, if ever man could boast of his resolution, 'I think I might now, that I abstained from falling 'prostrate at her feet, and adoring her. However, 'I triumphed; pride, I believe, triumphed, or per-'haps love got the better of love. We once more 'parted, and I promised, the next time I saw her, 'to reveal the name of my mistress.

'I now had, I thought, gained a complete vic-'tory over myself; and no small compliments did 'I pay to my own resolution. In short, I tri-'umphed as cowards and niggards do, when they 'flatter themselves with having given some sup-

'posed instance of courage or generosity; and 'my triumph lasted as long; that is to say, till 'my ascendant passion had a proper opportu- 'nity of displaying itself in its true and natural 'colours.

'Having hitherto succeeded so well in my own 'opinion, and obtained this mighty self-conquest, 'I now entertained a design of exerting the most 'romantic generosity, and of curing that un- 'happy passion which I perceived I had raised in 'Amelia.

'Among the ladies who had expressed the great- 'est satisfaction at my Amelia's misfortune, Miss 'Osborne had distinguished herself in a very eminent 'degree; she was, indeed, the next in beauty to my 'angel, nay, she had disputed the preference, and 'had some among her admirers, who were blind 'enough to give it in her favour.'

'Well,' cries the lady, 'I will allow you to call 'them blind; but Miss Osborne was a charming 'girl.'

'She certainly was handsome,' answered he, 'and 'a very considerable fortune; so I thought my 'Amelia would have little difficulty in believing me, 'when I fixed on her as my mistress. And I con- 'cluded, that my thus placing my affections on her 'known enemy, would be the surest method of 'eradicating every tender idea with which I had 'been ever honoured by Amelia.

'Well then, to Amelia I went; she received me 'with more than usual coldness and reserve; in 'which, to confess the truth, there appeared to me 'more of anger than indifference, and more of de- 'jection than of either. After some short intro- 'duction, I revived the discourse of my amour, and 'presently mentioned Miss Osborne as the lady 'whose name I had concealed; adding, that the

'true reason why I did not mention her before, was, 'that I apprehended there was some little distance 'between them, which I hoped to have the happi-'ness of accommodating.

'Amelia answered with much gravity, "If you "know, Sir, that there is any distance between us, "I suppose you know the reason of that distance; "and then, I think, I could not have expected to be "affronted by her name. I would not have you "think, Mr. Booth, that I hate Miss Osborne. No! "Heaven is my witness, I despise her too much.— "Indeed, when I reflect how much I loved the "woman who hath treated me so cruelly, I own it "gives me pain—when I lay, as I then imagined, "and as all about me believed, on my death-bed, "in all the agonies of pain and misery, to become "the object of laughter to my dearest friend.—O "Mr. Booth, it is a cruel reflection! and could "I after this have expected from you—but why "not from you, to whom I am a person entirely "indifferent, if such a friend could treat me so bar-"barously?"

'During the greater part of this speech, the 'tears streamed from her bright eyes. I could 'endure it no longer. I caught up the word in-'different, and repeated it, saying, Do you think 'then, Madam, that Miss Emily is indifferent to 'me?'

"Yes, surely, I do," answered she, "I know I "am: indeed, why should I not be indifferent to "you?"

'Have my eyes,' said I, 'then, declared no-'thing?'

"O! there is no need of your eyes," answered she. "Your tongue hath declared that you have "singled out of all womankind my greatest, I will "say, my basest enemy.——I own I once thought

" that character would have been no recommen-
" dation to you ;—but why did I think so ? I was
" born to deceive myself."

' I then fell on my knees before her ; and forcing
' her hand, cried out, O my Amelia ! I can bear no
' longer. You are the only mistress of my affec-
' tions ; you are the deity I adore. In this style I
' ran on for above two or three minutes, what it is
' mpossible to repeat, till a torrent of contending
' passions, together with the surprise, overpowered
' her gentle spirits, and she fainted away in my
' arms.

' To describe my sensation till she returned to
' herself, is not in my power.'—' You need not,'
cries Miss Matthews.—' Oh, happy Amelia ! why
' had I not been blest with such a passion ?'—' I am
' convinced, Madam,' continued he, ' you cannot
' expect all the particulars of the tender scene which
' ensued. I was not enough in my senses to re-
' member it all. Let it suffice to say, that that be-
' haviour with which Amelia, while ignorant of its
' motive, had been so much displeased, when she
' became sensible of that motive, proved the strong-
' est recommendation to her favour ; and she was
' pleased to call it generous.'

' Generous ! repeated the lady, ' and so it was,
' almost beyond the reach of humanity. I question
' whether you ever had an equal.'

Perhaps the critical reader may have the same doubt with Miss Matthews ; and lest he should, we will here make a gap in our history, to give him an opportunity of accurately considering whether this conduct of Mr. Booth was natural or no ; and consequently, whether we have, in this place, maintained or deviated from that strict adherence to universal truth, which we profess above all other historians.

CHAP. III.

The Narrative continued. More of the Touchstone.

BOOTH made a proper acknowledgement of Miss Matthews's civility, and then renewed his story.

'We were upon the footing of lovers; and Ame-
'lia threw off her reserve more and more, till at
'length I found all that return of my affection which
'the tenderest lover can require.

'My situation would now have been a paradise,
'had not my happiness been interrupted with the
'same reflections I have already mentioned; had I
'not, in short, concluded, that I must derive all my
'joys from the almost certain ruin of that dear crea-
'ture to whom I should owe them.

'This thought haunted me night and day; till
'I, at last, grew unable to support it: I therefore
'resolved in the strongest manner, to lay it before
'Amelia.

'One evening then, after the highest professions
'of the most disinterested love, in which, Heaven
'knows my sincerity, I took an occasion to speak
'to Amelia, in the following manner:

"Too true is it, I am afraid, my dearest creature,
"that the highest human happiness is imperfect.
"How rich would be my cup, was it not for one
"poisonous drop which embitters the whole! O,
"Amelia! what must be the consequence of my
"ever having the honour to call you mine!—You
"know my situation in life, and you know your
"own: I have nothing more than the poor provi-
"sion of an ensign's commission to depend on;
"your sole dependence is on your mother; should

" any act of disobedience defeat your expectations,
" how wretched must your lot be with me: O,
" Amelia! how ghastly an object to my mind is
" the apprehension of your distress! Can I bear
" to reflect a moment on the certainty of your fore-
" going all the conveniencies of life! on the possi-
" bility of your suffering all its most dreadful in-
" conveniencies! what must be my misery then,
" to see you in such a situation, and to upbraid my-
" self with being the accursed cause of bringing
" you to it? Suppose too in such a season, I should
" be summoned from you. Could I submit to see
" you encounter all the hazards, the fatigues of war,
" with me? you could not yourself, however wil-
" ling, support them a single campaign. What
" then! must I leave you to starve alone, deprived
" of the tenderness of a husband, deprived too of
" the tenderness of the best of mothers, through
" my means? a woman most dear to me, for being
" the parent, the nurse, and the friend of my Ame-
" lia.——But oh! my sweet creature, carry your
" thoughts a little farther. Think of the tenderest
" consequences, the dearest pledges of our love.
" Can I bear to think of entailing beggary on the
" posterity of my Amelia? on our——Oh, Hea-
" vens! on our children!—On the other side, is it
" possible even to mention the word—I will not,
" must not, cannot, cannot part with you.—What
" must we do, Amelia? It is now I sincerely ask
" your advice."

" What advice can I give you," said she, " in
" such an alternative? Would to Heaven we had
" never met."

' These words were accompanied with a sigh,
' and a look inexpressibly tender, the tears at the
' same time overflowing all her lovely cheeks. I

' was endeavouring to reply, when I was interrupt-
' ed by what soon put an end to the scene.

' Our amour had already been buzzed all over ' the town; and it came at last to the ears of Mrs. ' Harris: I had, indeed, observed of late a great al- ' teration in that lady's behaviour towards me, when- ' ever I visited at the house; nor could I, for a long ' time, before this evening, ever obtain a private ' interview with Amelia; and now, it seems, I ' owed it to her mother's intention of overhearing ' all that passed between us.

' At the period then abovementioned, Mrs. Har- ' ris burst from the closet, where she had hid her- ' self, and surprised her daughter, reclining on my ' bosom, in all that tender sorrow I have just de- ' scribed. I will not attempt to paint the rage of ' the mother, or the daughter's confusion, or my ' own. "Here are very fine doings, indeed," cries Mrs. Harris; "You have made a noble use, " Amelia, of my indulgence, and the trust I re- " posed in you.—As for you, Mr. Booth, I will " not accuse you; you have used my child, as I " ought to have expected; I may thank myself for " what hath happened;" with much more of the ' same kind, before she would suffer me to speak; ' but, at last, I obtained a hearing, and offered to ' excuse my poor Amelia, who was ready to sink ' into the earth under the oppression of grief, by ' taking as much blame as I could on myself.' Mrs. Harris answered, "No, Sir, I must say you are " innocent in comparison of her; nay, I can say, " I have heard you use dissuasive arguments; and " I promise you they are of weight. I have, I " thank heaven, one dutiful child, and I shall " henceforth think her my only one."—' She then ' forced the poor, trembling, fainting Amelia out of ' the room; which when she had done, she began

' [illegible] to reason with me on the folly, as well ' [illegible], which I had been guilty of; and re- ' pe[illegible] me almost every word I had before urged ' to her daughter. In fine, she at last obtained of ' me a promise, that I would soon go to my regi- ' ment, and submit to any misery, rather than that ' of being the ruin of Amelia.

' I now, for many days, endured the greatest ' torments which the human mind is, I believe, ca- ' pable of feeling; and I can honestly say, I tried ' all the means, and applied every argument which ' I could raise, to cure me of my love. And to ' make these the more effectual, I spent every night ' in walking backwards and forwards in the sight ' of Mrs. Harris's house, where I never failed to find ' some object or other, which raised some tender ' idea of my lovely Amelia, and almost drove me to ' distraction.'

' And, don't you think, Sir,' said Miss Matthews, ' you took a most preposterous method to cure ' yourself?'

' Alas, Madam,' answered he, ' you cannot see it ' in a more absurd light than I do; but those know ' little of real love or grief, who do not know how ' much we deceive ourselves when we pretend to ' aim at the cure of either. It is with these, as it is ' with some distempers of the body, nothing is, in ' the least, agreeable to us but what serves to heigh- ' ten the disease.

' At the end of a fortnight, when I was driven ' almost to the highest degree of despair, and could ' contrive no method of conveying a letter to Ame- ' lia, how was I surprised when Mrs. Harris's ser- ' vant brought me a card, with an invitation from ' the mother herself, to drink tea that evening at ' her house!

' You will easily believe, Madam, that I did not

'fail so agreeable an appointment; on my arrival, 'I was introduced into a large company of men and 'women, Mrs. Harris and my Amelia being part 'of the company.

'Amelia seemed in my eyes to look more beau-'tiful than ever, and behaved with all the gaiety 'imaginable. The old lady treated me with much 'civility; but the young lady took little notice of 'me, and addressed most of her discourse to another 'gentleman present. Indeed, she now and then 'gave me a look of no discouraging kind; and I 'observed her colour change more than once, when 'her eyes met mine; circumstances which, perhaps, 'ought to have afforded me sufficient comfort, but 'they could not allay the thousand doubts and 'fears with which I was alarmed; for my anxious 'thoughts suggested no less to me than that Ame-'lia had made her peace with her mother at the 'price of abandoning me for ever, and of giving her 'ear to some other lover. All my prudence now 'vanished at once; and I would that instant have 'gladly run away with Amelia, and have married 'her, without the least consideration of any conse-'quences.

'With such thoughts I had tormented myself 'for near two hours, till most of the company had 'taken their leave. This I was myself incapable 'of doing; nor do I know when I should have 'put an end to my visit, had not Dr. Harrison 'taken me away almost by force, telling me, in a 'whisper, that he had something to say to me of 'great consequence.—You know the doctor, Ma-'dam—.'

'Very well, Sir,' answered Miss Matthews, 'and 'one of the best men in the world he is, and an ho-'nour to the sacred order to which he belongs.'

'You will judge,' replied Booth, 'by the sequel, 'whether I have reason to think him so.'—He then proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. IV.

The Story of Mr. Booth continued. In this Chapter the Reader will perceive a Glimpse of the Character of a very good Divine; with some Matters of a very tender kind.

'THE doctor conducted me into his study; and 'then desiring me to sit down, began, as near as I 'can remember, in these words, or at least to this 'purpose:

"You cannot imagine, young gentleman, that "your love for Miss Emily is any secret in this "place; I have known it some time, and have "been, I assure you, very much your enemy in "this affair."

'I answered, That I was very much obliged to 'him.'

"Why, so you are," replied he; "and so, perhaps you will think yourself, when you know "all.—I went, about a fortnight ago, to Mrs. Harris, to acquaint her with my apprehensions on "her daughter's account; for though the matter "was much talked of, I thought it might possibly "not have reached her ears. I will be very plain "with you. I advised her to take all possible "care of the young lady, and even to send her to "some place, where she might be effectually kept "out of your reach, while you remained in the "town."

'And do you think, Sir,' said I, 'that this was 'acting a kind part by me? or do you expect that 'I should thank you on this occasion?'

"Young man," answered he, "I did not intend "you any kindness; nor do I desire any of your "thanks. My intention was to preserve a worthy "lady from a young fellow of whom I had heard "no good character, and whom I imagined to have "a design of stealing a human creature for the sake "of her fortune."

'It was very kind of you, indeed,' answered I, 'to entertain such an opinion of me.'

"Why, Sir," replied the doctor, "it is the opi-"nion which, I believe, most of you young gentle-"men of the order of the rag deserve. I have "known some instances, and have heard of more, "where such young fellows have committed rob-"bery under the name of marriage."

'I was going to interrupt him with some anger, 'when he desired me to have a little patience, and 'then informed me, that he had visited Mrs. Harris, 'with the abovementioned design, the evening after 'the discovery I have related; that Mrs. Harris, 'without waiting for his information, had recounted 'to him all which had happened the evening before; 'and, indeed, she must have an excellent memory, 'for I think she repeated every word I said; and 'added, that she had confined her daughter to her 'chamber, where she kept her a close prisoner, 'and had not seen her since.

'I cannot express, nor would modesty suffer me 'if I could, all that now past. The doctor took 'me by the hand, and burst forth into the warmest 'commendations of the sense and generosity which 'he was pleased to say discovered themselves in my 'speech. You know, Madam, his strong and 'singular way of expressing himself on all occa-

sions, especially when he is affected with any thing. "Sir," said he, "if I knew half a dozen such instances in the army, the Painter should put red liveries upon all the saints in my closet."

'From this instant, the doctor told me, he had 'become my friend and zealous advocate with Mrs. 'Harris, on whom he had at last prevailed, though 'not without the greatest difficulty, to consent to 'my marrying Amelia, upon condition that I set'tled every penny which the mother should lay 'down; and that she would retain a certain sum in 'her hands, which she would at any time deposit 'for my advancement in the army.

'You will, I hope, Madam, conceive that I made 'no hesitation at these conditions; nor need I men'tion the joy which I felt on this occasion, or the 'acknowledgement I paid the doctor, who is, in'deed, as you say, one of the best of men.

'The next morning I had permission to visit 'Amelia, who received me in such a manner, that 'I now concluded my happiness to be complete.

'Every thing was now agreed on all sides, and 'lawyers employed to prepare the writings, when 'an unexpected cloud arose suddenly in our serene 'sky, and all our joys were obscured in a mo'ment.

'When matters were, as I apprehended, drawing 'near a conclusion, I received an express, that a 'sister, whom I tenderly loved, was seized with a 'violent fever, and earnestly desired me to come to 'her. I immediately obeyed the summons, and as 'it was then about two in the morning, without 'staying even to take leave of Amelia, for whom I 'left a short billet, acquainting her with the reason 'of my absence.

'The gentleman's house where my sister then 'was, stood at fifty miles distance, and though I

'used the utmost expedition, the unmerciful distemper had, before my arrival, entirely deprived the poor girl of her senses, as it soon after did of her life.

'Not all the love I bore Amelia, nor the tumultuous delight with which the approaching hour of possessing her filled my heart, could, for a while, allay my grief at the loss of my beloved Nancy. Upon my soul, I cannot yet mention her name without tears. Never brother and sister had, I believe, a higher friendship for each other. Poor dear girl! whilst I sat by her in her light-headed fits, she repeated scarce any other name but mine; and it plainly appeared, that when her dear reason was ravished away from her, it had left my image on her fancy, and that the last use she had made of it was to think on me.—"Send for my dear Billy immediately," she cried, "I know he will come to me in a moment. Will no body fetch him to me? pray don't kill me before I see him once more—You durst not use me so if he was here."——'Every accent still rings in my ears.—Oh, heavens! to hear this, and at the same time to see the poor delirious creature deriving the greatest horrors from my sight, and mistaking me for a highwayman who had a little before robbed her.—But I ask your pardon, the sensations I felt are to be known only from experience, and to you must appear dull and insipid. At last, she seemed for a moment to know me, and cried, "O heavens! my dearest brother!" upon which she fell into immediate convulsions, and died away in my arms.'

Here Booth stopped a moment, and wiped his eyes; and Miss Matthews, perhaps out of complaisance, wiped hers.

CHAP. V.

Containing strange Revolutions of Fortune.

BOOTH proceeded thus:

'This loss, perhaps, Madam, you will think had 'made me miserable enough; but Fortune did not 'think so; for on the day when my Nancy was to 'be buried, a courier arrived from Dr. Harrison 'with a letter, in which the doctor acquainted me, 'that he was just come from Mrs. Harris, when 'he dispatched the express; and earnestly desired 'me to return the very instant I received his letter, 'as I valued my Amelia. Though if the daughter,' 'added he, 'should take after her mother (as most 'of them do) it will be, perhaps, wiser in you to 'stay away.

'I presently sent for the messenger into my room, 'and with much difficulty extorted from him, that 'a great 'squire in his coach and six was come to 'Mrs. Harris's, and that the whole town said he 'was shortly to be married to Amelia.

'I now soon perceived how much superior my 'love for Amelia was to every other passion; poor 'Nancy's idea disappeared in a moment: I quitted 'the dear lifeless corpse, over which I had shed a 'thousand tears, left the care of her funeral to others, 'and posted, I may almost say flew, back to Ame-'lia, and alighted at the doctor's house, as he had 'desired me in his letter.

'The good man presently acquainted me with 'what had happened in my absence. Mr. Winck-'worth had, it seems, arrived the very day of my 'departure, with a grand equipage, and, without 'delay, had made formal proposals to Mrs. Harris,

'offering to settle any part of his [illegible]ate, in
'whatever manner she pleased, on [illegible] These
'proposals the old lady had, witho[illegible]
'ration, accepted, and had insisted, [illegible]e most
'violent manner, on her daughter's compliance,
'which Amelia had as peremptorily refused to give;
'insisting on her part, on the consent which her
'mother had before given to our marriage, in
'which she was heartily seconded by the doctor,
'who declared to her, as he now did to me,—
"That we ought as much to be esteemed man and
"wife, as if the ceremony had already past between
"us."

'These remonstrances, the doctor told me, had
'worked no effect on Mrs. Harris, who still per-
'sisted in her avowed resolution of marrying her
'daughter to Winckworth, whom the doctor had
'likewise attacked, telling him that he was paying
'his addresses to another man's wife; but all to no
'purpose, the young gentleman was too much in
'love to hearken to any dissuasives.

'We now entered into a consultation what means
'to employ. The doctor earnestly protested
'against any violence to be offered to the person of
'Winckworth, which, I believe, I had rashly threat-
'ened; declaring, that if I made any attempt of
'that kind, he would for ever abandon my cause.
'I made him a solemn promise of forbearance. At
'last he determined to pay another visit to Mrs.
'Harris, and if he found her obdurate, he said he
'thought himself at liberty to join us together with-
'out any further consent of the mother; which
'every parent, he said, had a right to refuse, but
'not to retract when given, unless the party him-
'self, by some conduct of his, gave a reason.

'The doctor having made his visit with no better
'success than before, the matter now debated was

'how to get possession of Amelia by stratagem; '[illegible] now a closer prisoner than ever, was 'her [illegible] bedfellow by night, and never out of '[illegible] day.

'W[illegible] we were deliberating on this point, a 'wine merchant of the town came to visit the doc- 'tor, to inform him that he had just bottled off a 'hogshead of excellent old port, of which he of- 'fered to spare him a hamper, saying, that he 'was that day to send in twelve dozen to Mrs. 'Harris.

'The doctor now smiled at a conceit which 'came into his head; and, taking me aside, asked 'me if I had love enough for the young lady to 'venture into the house in a hamper. I joyfully 'leapt at the proposal, to which the merchant, at 'the doctor's intercession, consented; for I believe, 'Madam, you know the great authority which 'that worthy man had over the whole town. The 'doctor, moreover, promised to procure a license, 'and to perform the office for us at his house, if 'I could find any means of conveying Amelia 'thither.

'In this hamper then I was carried to the house, 'and deposited in the entry, where I had not lain 'long before I was again removed and packed up 'in a cart in order to be sent five miles into the 'country; for I heard the orders given as I lay in 'the entry; and there I likewise heard that Ame- 'lia and her mother were to follow me the next 'morning.

'I was unloaded from my cart, and set down 'with the rest of the lumber, in a great hall. 'Here I remained above three hours, impatiently 'waiting for the evening, when I determined to 'quit a posture which was become very uneasy, 'and break my prison; but Fortune contrived to

'release me sooner, by the following means: The 'house where I now was, had been left in the care 'of one maid servant. This faithful creature e 'into the hall, with the footman who had 'the cart. A scene of the highest fondness having 'past between them, the fellow proposed, and the 'maid consented, to open the hamper and drink a 'bottle together, which they agreed their mistress 'would hardly miss in such a quantity. They pre-'sently began to execute their purpose. They open-'ed the hamper, and to their great surprise disco-'vered the contents.

'I took an immediate advantage of the conster-'nation which appeared in the countenances of both 'the servants, and had sufficient presence of mind 'to improve the knowledge of those secrets to 'which I was privy. I told them that it entirely 'depended on their behaviour to me whether their 'mistress should ever be acquainted, either with 'what they had done, or with what they had in-'tended to do; for that if they would keep my se-'cret, I would reciprocally keep theirs. I then ac-'quainted them with my purpose of lying conceal-'ed in the house, in order to watch an opportunity 'of obtaining a private interview with Amelia.

'In the situation in which these two delinquents 'stood, you may be assured it was not difficult for 'me to seal up their lips. In short, they agreed to 'whatever I proposed. I lay that evening in my 'dear Amelia's bedchamber, and was in the morn-'ing conveyed into an old lumber garret, were I 'was to wait till Amelia (whom the maid promised, 'on her arrival, to inform of my place of conceal-'ment) could find some opportunity of seeing me.'

'I ask pardon for interrupting you,' cries Miss Matthews, 'but you bring to my remembrance a 'foolish story which I heard at that time, though at

'a great distance from you: That an officer had, 'in confederacy with Miss Harris, broke open her 'mother's cellar, and stole away a great quantity 'of her wine. I mention it only to shew you what 'sort of foundations most stories have.'

Booth told her he had heard some such thing himself, and then continued his story as in the next chapter.

CHAP. VI.

Containing many surprising Adventures.

'HERE,' continued he, 'I remained the whole 'day, in hopes of a happiness, the expected approach 'of which gave me such a delight that I would not 'have exchanged my poor lodgings for the finest 'palace in the universe.

'A little after it was dark, Mrs. Harris arrived, 'together with Amelia and her sister. I cannot 'express how much my heart now began to flutter; 'for as my hopes every moment increased, strange 'fears, which I had not felt before, began now to 'intermingle with them.

'When I had continued full two hours in these 'circumstances, I heard a woman's step tripping 'up stairs, which I fondly hoped was my Amelia; 'but all on a sudden the door flew open, and Mrs. 'Harris herself appeared at it, with a countenance 'pale as death, her whole body trembling, I sup-'pose, with anger; she fell upon me in the most 'bitter language. It is not necessary to repeat 'what she said, nor indeed can I, I was so shocked 'and confounded on this occasion.—In a word, the

'scene ended with my departing without seeing 'Amelia.'

'And pray,' cries Miss Matthews, 'how happened this unfortunate discovery?'

Booth answered, 'That the lady at supper ordered a bottle of wine, which neither myself,' said he, 'nor the servants, had presence of mind to 'provide. Being told there was none in the house, 'though she had been before informed that the 'things came all safe, she had sent for the maid, 'who being unable to devise any excuse, had fallen 'on her knees, and after confessing her design of 'opening a bottle, which she imputed to the fellow, 'betrayed poor me, to her mistress.

'Well, Madam, after a lecture of about a quarter of an hour's duration from Mrs. Harris, I suffered her to conduct me to the outward gate of 'her court-yard, whence I set forward in a disconsolate condition of mind, towards my lodgings. 'I had five miles to walk in a dark and rainy night: 'But how can I mention these trifling circumstances, as any aggravation of my disappointment!'

'How was it possible,' cried Miss Matthews, 'that 'you could be got out of the house without seeing 'Miss Harris?'

'I assure you, Madam,' answered Booth, 'I 'have often wondered at it myself; but my spirits 'were so much sunk at the sight of her mother, 'that no man was ever a greater coward than I was 'at that instant. Indeed, I believe my tender concern for the terrors of Amelia were the principal 'cause of my submission. However it was, I left 'the house, and walked about a hundred yards, 'when, at the corner of the garden wall, a female 'voice, in a whisper, cried out, "Mr. Booth." 'The person was extremely near me, but it was so

'dark I could scarce see her; nor could I, in the 'confusion I was in, immediately recognize the 'voice. I answered in a line of Congreve's, 'which burst from my lips spontaneously; for I 'am sure I had no intention to quote plays at that 'time:

"Who calls the wretched thing that was Al-"phonso?"

'Upon which a woman leapt into my arms, 'crying out—"O! it is indeed my Alphonso, my "only Alphonso!"——O Miss Matthews! guess 'what I felt when I found I had my Amelia in my 'arms. I embraced her with an ecstacy not to be 'described, at the same instant pouring a thousand 'tendernesses into her ears; at least, if I could ex-'press so many to her in a minute; for in that timo 'the alarm began at the house, Mrs. Harris had 'missed her daughter, and the court was presently 'full of lights and noises of all kinds.

'I now lifted Amelia over a gate, and, jumping 'after, we crept along together by the side of a 'hedge, a different way from what led to the town, 'as I imagined that would be the road through 'which they would pursue us. In this opinion I 'was right; for we heard them pass along that 'road, and the voice of Mrs. Harris herself, who 'ran with the rest, notwithstanding the darkness 'and the rain. By these means we luckily made 'our escape, and, clambering over a hedge and 'ditch, my Amelia performing the part of a heroine 'all the way, we at length arrived at a little green 'lane, where stood a vast spreading oak, under 'which we sheltered ourselves from a violent 'storm.

'When this was over, and the moon began to 'appear, Amelia declared, she knew very well 'where she was; and a little farther, striking into

'another lane, to the right, she said, that would 'lead us to a house where we should be both safe 'and unsuspected. I followed her directions, and 'we at length came to a little cottage about three 'miles distant from Mrs. Harris's house.

'As it now rained very violently, we entered this 'cottage, in which we espied a light, without any 'ceremony. Here we found an elderly woman sit- 'ting by herself at a little fire, who had no sooner 'viewed us, than she instantly sprung from her 'seat, and starting back, gave the strongest tokens 'of amazement; upon which Amelia said, "Be "not surprised, nurse, though you see me in a "strange pickle I own." The old woman, after 'having several times blessed herself, and expressed 'the most tender concern for the lady, who stood 'dripping before her, began to bestir herself in 'making up the fire; at the same time intreating 'Amelia, that she might be permitted to furnish her 'with some clothes, which, she said, though not 'fine, were clean and wholesome, and much dryer 'than her own. I seconded this motion so vehe- 'mently, that Amelia, though she declared herself 'under no apprehension of catching cold (she hath 'indeed the best constitution in the world), at last 'consented, and I retired without doors, under a 'shed, to give my angel an opportunity of dressing 'herself in the only room which the cottage afford- 'ed below stairs.

'At my return into the room, Amelia insisted 'on my exchanging my coat for one which be- 'longed to the old woman's son.'——'I am very 'glad,' cried Miss Matthews, 'to find she did not 'forget you. I own, I thought it somewhat cruel 'to turn you out into the rain.'——'O Miss Mat- 'thews!' continued he, taking no notice of her observation, 'I had now an opportunity of con-

'templating the vast power of exquisite beauty; 'which nothing almost can add to or diminish. 'Amelia, in the poor rags of her old nurse, looked 'scarce less beautiful than I have seen her appear at 'a ball or an assembly.'—'Well, well,' cries Miss Matthews, 'to be sure she did;—but pray go on 'with your story.'

'The old woman,' continued he, 'after having 'equipped us as well as she could, and placed our 'wet clothes before the fire, began to grow inqui-'sitive; and after some ejaculations, she cried—"O my dear young Madam! my mind misgives "me hugeously, and pray who is this fine young "gentleman? Oh! Miss Emmy, Miss Emmy, I "am afraid Madam knows nothing of all this "matter." 'Suppose he should be my husband, 'nurse,' answered Amelia,——" Oh! good! and "if he be," replies the nurse, "I hope he is some "great gentleman or other, with a vast estate, and "a coach and six: for to be sure, if an he was "the greatest lord in the land, you would de-"serve it all."—'But why do I attempt to mimic 'the honest creature. In short, she discovered the 'greatest affection for my Amelia: with which I 'was much more delighted than I was offended at 'the suspicions she shewed of me, or the many 'bitter curses which she denounced against me, if 'I ever proved a bad husband to so sweet a young 'lady.

'I so well improved the hint given me by Ame-'lia, that the old woman had no doubt of our be-'ing really married; and comforting herself, that 'if it was not as well as it might have been, yet 'Madam had enough for us both, and that happi-'ness did not always depend on great riches, she 'began to rail at the old lady for having turned 'us out of doors, which I scarce told an untruth

'in asserting. And when Amelia said, "She hoped "her nurse would not betray her."—The good 'woman answered with much warmth,—"Betray "you, my dear young madam! no, that I would "not, if the king would give me all that he is "worth: No, not if Madam herself would give me "the great house, and the whole farm belonging "to it."

'The good woman then went out and fetched a 'chicken from the roost, which she killed, and be-'gan to pick, without asking any questions. Then 'summoning her son, who was in bed, to her as-'sistance, she began to prepare this chicken for our 'supper. This she afterwards set before us in so 'neat, I may almost say, elegant a manner, that 'whoever would have disdained it, either doth not 'know the sensation of hunger, or doth not deserve 'to have it gratified. Our food was attended with 'some ale, which our kind hostess said she intend-'ed not to have tapped till Christmas; "but," 'added she, "I little thought ever to have the ho-"nour of seeing my dear honoured lady in this poor "place."

'For my own part, no human being was then 'an object of envy to me; and even Amelia seem-'ed to be in pretty good spirits; she softly whis-'pered to me, that she perceived there might be 'happiness in a cottage.'

'A cottage!' cries Miss Matthews, sighing, 'a 'cottage with the man one loves is a palace.'

'When supper was ended,' continued Booth, 'the good woman began to think of our further 'wants, and very earnestly recommended her bed 'to us, saying, it was a very neat, though homely 'one, and that she could furnish us with a pair 'of clean sheets. She added some persuasives 'which painted my angel all over with vermillion.

'As for myself, I behaved so awkwardly and foolishly, and so readily agreed to Amelia's resolution of sitting up all night, that if it did not give the nurse any suspicion of our marriage, it ought to have inspired her with the utmost contempt for me.

'We both endeavoured to prevail with nurse to retire to her own bed, but found it utterly impossible to succeed; she thanked heaven she understood breeding better than that. And so well bred was the good woman, that we could scarce get her out of the room the whole night. Luckily for us, we both understood French, by means of which we consulted together, even in her presence, upon the measures we were to take in our present exigency. At length it was resolved that I should send a letter by this young lad, whom I have just before mentioned, to our worthy friend the doctor, desiring his company at our hut, since we thought it utterly unsafe to venture to the town, which we knew would be in an uproar on our account before the morning.'

Here Booth made a full stop, smiled, and then said, he was going to mention so ridiculous a distress, that he could scarce think of it without laughing.—What this was, the reader shall know in the next chapter.

CHAP. VII.

The Story of Booth continued. More surprising Adventures.

' FROM what trifles dear Miss Matthews,' cried Booth, ' may some of our greatest distresses arise! ' Do you not perceive I am going to tell you we ' had neither pen, ink, nor paper in our present ' exigency?

' A verbal message was now our only resource; ' however we contrived to deliver it in such terms, ' that neither nurse nor her son could possibly ' conceive any suspicion from it of the present ' situation of our affairs. Indeed, Amelia whis- ' pered me, I might safely place any degree of ' confidence in the lad; for he had been her foster ' brother, and she had a great opinion of his inte- ' grity. He was in truth a boy of very good na- ' tural parts; and Dr. Harrison, who had received ' him into his family, at Amelia's recommendation, ' had bred him up to write and read very well, and ' had taken some pains to infuse into him the prin- ' ciples of honesty and religion. He was not in- ' deed, even now discharged from the doctor's ser- ' vice; but had been at home with his mother for ' some time, on account of the small-pox, from ' which he was lately recovered.

' I have said so much,' continued Booth, ' of the ' boy's character, that you may not be surprised ' at some stories which I shall tell you of him ' hereafter.

' I am going, now, Madam, to relate to you one ' of those strange accidents, which are produced ' by such a train of circumstances, that mere

'chance hath been thought incapable of bringing 'them together; and which have therefore given 'birth in superstitious minds, to Fortune, and to 'several other imaginary beings.

'We were now impatiently expecting the arrival 'of the doctor; our messenger had been gone 'much more than a sufficient time, which to 'us, you may be assured, appeared not at all shorter 'than it was, when nurse, who had gone out of 'doors on some errand, came running hastily to 'us, crying out, "O my dear young madam, her 'ladyship's coach is just at the door!" Amelia 'turned pale as death at these words; indeed, I 'feared she would have fainted, if I could be said 'to fear, who had scarce any of my senses left, 'and was in a condition little better than my 'angel's.

'While we were both in this dreadful situation, 'Amelia fallen back in her chair with the coun-'tenance in which ghosts are painted, myself at 'her feet, with a complexion of no very different 'colour, and nurse screamed out, and throwing 'water in Amelia's face, Mrs. Harris entered the 'room. At the sight of this scene, she threw her-'self likewise into a chair, and called immediately 'for a glass of water, which Miss Betty her 'daughter supplied her with; for, as to nurse, 'nothing was capable of making any impression 'on her, whilst she apprehended her young mis-'tress to be in danger.

'The doctor had now entered the room, and 'coming immediately up to Amelia, after some 'expressions of surprise, he took her by the hand, 'called her his little sugar-plumb, and assured her 'there were none but friends present. He then 'led her tottering across the room to Mrs. Harris. 'Amelia then fell upon her knees before her

'mother; but the doctor caught her up, saying, "Use that posture, child, only to the Almighty;" 'but I need not mention this singularity of his to 'you who know him so well, and must have heard 'him often dispute against addressing ourselves 'to man in the humblest posture which we use to- 'wards the Supreme Being.

'I will tire you with no more particulars; we 'were soon satisfied that the doctor had recon- 'ciled us and our affairs to Mrs. Harris; and we 'now proceeded directly to church, the doctor 'having provided a license for us.'

'But where is the strange accident,' cries Miss Matthews? 'sure you have raised more curiosity 'than you have satisfied.'

'Indeed, Madam,' answered he, 'your reproof 'is just; I had like to have forgotten it; but you 'cannot wonder at me when you reflect on that in- 'teresting part of my story, which I am now re- 'lating.—But before I mention this accident, I 'must tell you what happened after Amelia's escape 'from her mother's house. Mrs. Harris at first 'ran out into the lane among her servants, and 'pursued us (so she imagined) along the road 'leading to the town; but that being very dirty, 'and a violent storm of rain coming on, she took 'shelter in an alehouse, about half a mile from her 'own house, whither she sent for her coach; she 'then drove together with her daughter to town, 'where, soon after her arrival, she sent for the 'doctor, her usual privy counsellor in all her 'affairs. They sat up all night together, the 'doctor endeavouring, by arguments and per- 'suasions, to bring Mrs. Harris to reason; but 'all to no purpose, though, as he hath informed 'me, Miss Betty seconded him with the warmest 'entreaties.'

Here Miss Matthews laughed; of which Booth begged to know the reason; she, at last, after many apologies, said, 'It was the first good thing 'she ever heard of Miss Betty; nay,' said she, 'and asking your pardon for my opinion of your 'sister, since you will have it, I always conceived 'her to be the deepest of hypocrites.'

Booth fetched a sigh, and said, he was afraid she had not always acted so kindly;—and then, after a little hesitation, proceeded:

'You will be pleased, Madam, to remember, the 'lad was sent with a verbal message to the doctor; 'which message was no more than to acquaint him 'where we were, and to desire the favour of his 'company, or that he would send a coach to 'bring us to whatever place he would please to 'meet us at. This message was to be delivered 'to the doctor himself, and the messenger was 'ordered, if he found him not at home, to go to 'him wherever he was. He fulfilled his orders, 'and told it to the doctor in the presence of Mrs. 'Harris.'

'Oh, the ideot!' cries Miss Matthews. 'Not 'at all,' answered Booth: 'he is a very sensible 'fellow, as you will, perhaps, say hereafter. He 'had not the least reason to suspect that any 'secrecy was necessary; for we took the utmost 'care he should not suspect it.—Well, madam, 'this accident, which appeared so unfortunate, 'turned in the highest degree to our advantage. 'Mrs. Harris no sooner heard the message deli'vered, than she fell into the most violent passion 'imaginable, and accused the doctor of being in 'the plot, and of having confederated with me in 'the design of carrying off her daughter.

'The doctor, who had hitherto used only sooth'ing methods, now talked in a different strain. He

‘ confessed the accusation, and justified his con-
‘ duct. He said he was no meddler in the family
‘ affairs of others, nor should he have concerned
‘ himself with hers, but at her own request; but
‘ that since Mrs. Harris herself had made him an
‘ agent in this matter, he would take care to acquit
‘ himself with honour, and above all things to pre-
‘ serve a young lady for whom he had the highest
‘ esteem; “ for she is,” cries he, and, by heavens,
‘ he said true, “ the most worthy, generous, and
‘ noble of all human beings.” You have your-
‘ self, Madam, said he, consented to the match.
‘ I have, at your request, made the match; and
‘ then he added some particulars relating to his
‘ opinion of me, which my modesty forbids me to
‘ repeat.’—‘ Nay, but,’ cries Miss Matthews, ‘ I in-
‘ sist on your conquest of that modesty for once.
‘ We women do not love to hear one another's
‘ praises, and I will be made amends by hearing
‘ the praises of a man, and of a man, whom, per-
‘ haps,’ added she with a leer, ‘ I shall not think
‘ much the better of upon that account.’—‘ In
‘ obedience to your commands then, Madam,’
continued he, ‘ the doctor was so kind to say, he
‘ had inquired into my character, and had found
‘ that I had been a dutiful son, and an affectionate
‘ brother. Relations, said he, in which, whoever
‘ discharges his duty well, gives us a well-grounded
‘ hope, that he will behave as properly in all the
‘ rest. ——H with saying, that Ame-deejudco u
‘ lia's happiness, her heart, nay, her very reputa-
‘ tion, were all concerned in this matter, to which,
‘ as he had been made instrumental, he was re-
‘ solved to carry her through it; and then taking
‘ the license from his pocket, declared to Mrs. Har-
‘ ris, that he would go that instant and marry her
‘ daughter wherever he found her. This speech,

'the doctor's voice, his look, and his behaviour, all 'which are sufficiently calculated to inspire awe, 'and even terror, when he pleases, frightened poor 'Mrs. Harris, and wrought a more sensible effect 'than it was in his power to produce by all his 'arguments and entreaties; and I have already 'related what followed.

'Thus the strange accident of our wanting pen, 'ink, and paper, and our not trusting the boy 'with our secret, occasioned the discovery to Mrs. 'Harris; that discovery put the doctor upon his 'metal, and produced that blessed event which I 'have recounted to you, and which, as my mother 'hath since confessed, nothing but the spirit which 'he had exerted after the discovery, could have 'brought about.

'Well, Madam, you now see me married to 'Amelia; in which situation you will, perhaps, 'think my happiness incapable of addition. Per-'haps it was so; and yet I can with truth say, 'that the love which I then bore Amelia, was not 'comparable to what I bear her now.' 'Happy 'Amelia!' cried Miss Matthews. 'If all men were 'like you, all women would be blessed; nay, the 'whole world would be so in a great measure: for 'upon my soul, I believe that from the damned 'inconstancy of your sex to ours proceeds half 'the miseries of mankind.'

That we may give the reader leisure to consider well the foregoing sentiment, we will here put an end to this chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

In which our Readers will probably be divided in their Opinion of Mr. Booth's Conduct.

BOOTH proceeded as follows:

'The first months of our marriage produced
'nothing remarkable enough to mention. I am
'sure I need not tell Miss Matthews that I found
'in my Amelia every perfection of human nature.
'Mrs. Harris at first gave us some little uneasiness.
'She had rather yielded to the doctor than given a
'willing consent to the match; however, by de-
'gress, she became more and more satisfied, and
'at last seemed perfectly reconciled. This we
'ascribed a good deal to the kind offices of Miss
'Betty, who had always appeared to be my friend.
'She had been greatly assisting to Amelia in mak-
'ing her escape, which I had no opportunity of
'mentioning to you before, and in all things be-
'haved so well, outwardly at least, to myself as
'well as to her sister, that we regarded her as our
'sincerest friend.

'About half a year after our marriage, two ad-
'ditional companies were added to our regiment,
'in one of which I was preferred to the command
'of a lieutenant. Upon this occasion, Miss Betty
'gave the first intimation of a disposition which
'we have since too severely experienced.'

'Your servant, Sir,' says Miss Matthews, 'then
'I find I was not mistaken in my opinion of the
'lady.—No, no, shew me any goodness in a cen-
'sorious prude, and—

As Miss Matthews hesitated for a simile or an execration, Booth proceeded: 'You will please to

'remember, Madam, there was formerly an agree-
'ment between myself and Mrs. Harris, that I
'should settle all my Amelia's fortune on her, ex-
'cept a certain sum, which was to be laid out in
'my advancement in the army; but as our mar-
'riage was carried on in the manner you have
'heard, no such agreement was ever executed.
'And since I was become Amelia's husband, not
'a word of this matter was ever mentioned by the
'old lady; and as for myself, I declare I had
'not yet awakened from that delicious dream of
'bliss in which the possession of Amelia had
'lulled me.'

Here Miss Matthews sighed, and cast the tenderest of looks on Booth, who thus continued his story:

'Soon after my promotion, Mrs. Harris one
'morning took an occasion to speak to me on this
'affair. She said, that as I had been promoted
'gratis to a lieutenancy, she would assist me with
'money to carry me yet a step higher; and if more
'was required than was formerly mentioned, it
'should not be wanting, since she was so perfectly
'satisfied with my behaviour to her daughter.
'Adding, that she hoped I had still the same in-
'clination to settle on my wife the remainder of
'her fortune.

'I answered with very warm acknowledgements
'of my mother's goodness, and declared, if I had
'the world, I was ready to lay it at my Amelia's
'feet. And so, heaven knows, I would ten thou-
'sand worlds.

'Mrs. Harris seemed pleased with the warmth
'of my sentiments, and said, she would imme-
'diately send to her lawyer and give him the ne-
'cessary orders; and thus ended our conversation
'on this subject.

'From this time, there was a very visible alteration in Miss Betty's behaviour. She grew reserved to hersister as well as to me. She was fretful and captious on the slightest occasion; nay she affected much to talk on the ill-consequences of an imprudent marriage, especially before her mother; and if ever any little tenderness or endearments escaped me in public towards Amelia, she never failed to make some malicious remark on the short duration of violent passions; and when I have expressed a fond sentiment for my wife, her sister would kindly wish she might hear as much seven years hence.

'All these matters have been since suggested to us by reflection; for while they actually past, both Amelia and myself had our thoughts too happily engaged to take notice of what discovered itself in the mind of any other person.

'Unfortunately for us, Mrs. Harris's lawyer happened at this time to be at London, where business detained him upwards of a month; and as Mrs. Harris would on no occasion employ any other, our affair was under an entire suspension till his return.

'Amelia, who was now big with child, had often expressed the deepest concern at her apprehensions of my being some time commanded abroad; a circumstance, which she declared if it should ever happen to her, even though she should not then be in the same situation as at present, would infallibly break her heart. These remonstrances were made with such tenderness, and so much affected me that to avoid any probability of such an event, I endeavoured to get an exchange into the horse-guards, a body of troops which very rarely goes abroad, unless where the king himself commands in person. I soon found an officer for my purpose, the terms were agreed on,

'and Mrs. Harris had ordered the money which 'I was to pay to be ready, notwithstanding the 'opposition made by Miss Betty, who openly dis-'suaded her mother from it; alleging that that 'exchange was highly to my disadvantage; that 'I could never hope to rise in the army after it; 'not forgetting, at the same time, some insinua-'tions very prejudicial to my reputation as a 'soldier.

'When every thing was agreed on, and the two 'commissions were actually made out, but not 'signed by the king, one day, at my return from 'hunting, Amelia flew to me, and eagerly em-'bracing me, cried out, "O Billy, I have news 'for you which delights my soul. Nothing sure 'was ever so fortunate as the exchange you have 'made. The regiment you was formerly in, is 'ordered for Gibraltar.'

'I received this news with far less transport than 'it was delivered. I answered coldly, Since the 'case was so, I heartily hoped the commissions 'might be both signed. "What do you say?" 'replied Amelia eagerly;—" Sure you told me "every thing was entirely settled. That look of "yours frightens me to death."—But I am run-'ning into too minute particulars. In short, I 'received a letter by that very post, from the offi-'cer with whom I had exchanged, insisting, that 'though his majesty had not signed the commis-'sions, that still the bargain was valid, partly 'urging it as a right, and partly desiring it as a 'favour, that he might go to Gibraltar in my 'room.

'This letter convinced me in every point. I was 'now informed that the commissions were not 'signed, and consequently that the exchange was 'not completed: of consequence the other could

'have no right to insist on going; and as for granting him such a favour, I too clearly saw I must do it at the expense of my honour. I was now reduced to a dilemma, the most dreadful which I think any man can experience; in which, I am not ashamed to own, I found love was not so overmatched by honour as he ought to have been. The thoughts of leaving Amelia in her present condition, to misery, perhaps death or madness, were insupportable; nor could any other consideration but that which now tormented me on the other side, have combatted them a moment.'

'No woman upon earth,' cries Miss Matthews, 'can despise want of spirit in a man more than myself; and yet I cannot help thinking you was rather too nice on this occasion.'

'You will allow, Madam,' answered Booth, 'that whoever offends against the laws of honour in the least instance, is treated as the highest delinquent. Here is no excuse, no pardon; and he doth nothing who leaves any thing undone. But if the conflict was so terrible with myself alone, what was my situation in the presence of Amelia? how could I support her sighs, her tears, her agonies, her despair! could I bear to think myself the cruel cause of her sufferings, for so I was! could I endure the thought of having it in my power to give her instant relief, for so it was, and refuse it her!

'Miss Betty was now again become my friend. She had scarce been civil to me for a fortnight last past, yet now she commended me to the skies, and as severely blamed her sister, whom she arraigned of the most contemptible weakness, in perferring my safety to my honour: She

'said many ill-natured things on the occasion, 'which I shall not now repeat.

'In the midst of this hurricane, the good doc- 'tor came to dine with Mrs. Harris, and at my 'desire delivered his opinion on the matter.'

Here Mr. Booth was interrupted in his narrative, by the arrival of a person whom we shall introduce in the next chapter.

CHAP. IX.

Containing a Scene of a different Kind from any of the preceding.

THE gentleman who now arrived was the keeper; or if you please, (for so he pleased to call himself) the governor of the prison.

He used so little ceremony at his approach, that the bolt which was very slight on the inside, gave way, and the door immediately flew open. He had no sooner entered the room than he acquainted Miss Matthews, that he had brought her very good news, for which he demanded a bottle of wine as his due.

This demand being complied with, he acquainted Miss Matthews, that the wounded gentleman was not dead, nor was his wound thought to be mortal: that loss of blood, and, perhaps, his fright, had occasioned his fainting away; 'but I 'believe, Madam,' said he, 'if you take the proper 'measures, you may be bailed to-morrow. I ex- 'pect the lawyer here this evening, and if you put 'the business into his hands, I warrant it will be 'done. Money to be sure must be parted with,

'that's to be sure. People to be sure will expect 'to touch a little in such cases. For my own part, 'I never desire to keep a prisoner longer than the 'law allows, not I: I always inform them they can 'be bailed as soon as I know it. I never make 'any bargain, not I; I always love to leave those 'things to the gentlemen and ladies themselves. I 'never suspect gentlemem and ladies of wanting 'generosity.'

Miss Matthews made a very slight answer to all these friendly professions. She said, she had done nothing she repented of, and was indifferent as to the event. 'All I can say,' cries she, 'is, that if 'the wretch is alive, there is no greater villain in 'life than himself;' and instead of mentioning any thing of the bail, she begged the keeper to leave her again alone with Mr. Booth. The keeper replied, 'Nay, Madam, perhaps it may be better to 'stay a little longer here, if you have not bail 'ready, than to buy them too dear. besides, a 'day or two hence, when the gentleman is past all 'danger of recovery, to be sure some folks that 'would expect an extraordinary fee now, cannot 'expect to touch any thing. And to be sure you 'shall want nothing here. The best of all things 'are to be had here for money, both eatable and drinkable; though I say it, I shan't turn my 'back to any of the taverns for either eatables or 'wind. The captain there need not have been so 'shy of owning himself when he first came in; 'we have had captains and other great gentlemen 'here before now; and no shame to them, though 'I say it. Many a great gentleman is sometimes 'found in places that don't become them half so 'well, let me tell them that, captain Booth, let me 'tell them that.'

'I see, Sir,' answered Booth, a little discom-

posed, 'that you are acquainted with my title as 'well as my name.'

'Ay, Sir,' cries the keeper, 'and I honour you 'the more for it. I love the gentlemen of the 'army. I was in the army myself formerly; in 'the lord of Oxford's horse. It is true I rode pri-'vate; but I had money enough to have bought 'in quarter-master, when I took it into my head 'to marry, and my wife she did not like that I 'should continue a soldier, she was all for a private 'life; and so I came to this business.'

'Upon my word, Sir,' answered Booth, 'you 'consulted your wife's inclinations very notably; 'but, pray, will you satisfy my curiosity in telling 'me, how you became acquainted that I was in 'the army; for my dress, I think, could not be-'tray me.'

'Betray!' replied the keeper; 'there is no be-'traying here, I hope—I am not a person to be-'tray people—But you are so shy and peery, you 'would almost make one suspect there was more 'in the matter. And if there be, I promise you, 'you need not be afraid of telling it me. You will 'excuse me giving you a hint; but the sooner the 'better, that's all. Others may be beforehand with 'you, and first come first served on these occa-'sions, that's all. Informers are odious, there's no 'doubt of that, and no one would care to be an 'informer if he could help it, because of the ill 'usage they always receive from the mob; yet it 'is dangerous to trust too much; and when safety 'and a good part of the reward too are on one 'side, and the gallows on the other—I know 'which a wise man would chuse.'

'What the devil do you mean by all this?' cries Booth.

'No offence, I hope,' answered the keeper; 'I

'speak for your good, and if you have been upon 'the snaffling lay——you understand me, I am 'sure.'

'Not I,' answered Booth, 'upon my honour.'

'Nay, nay,' replied the keeper, with a contemptuous sneer, 'if you are so peery as that comes to, 'you must take the consequences.—But for my 'part, I know I would not trust Robinson with 'twopence untold.'

'What do you mean?' cries Booth, 'who is 'Robinson?'

'And you don't know Robinson!' answered the keeper with great emotion. To which Booth replying in the negative; the keeper, after some tokens of amazement, cried out; 'Well, captain, I 'must say you are the best at it, of all the gentle'men I ever saw. However, I will tell you this: 'the lawyer and Mr. Robinson have been laying 'their heads together about you above half an hour 'this afternoon. I overheard them mention Cap'tain Booth several times; and for my part, I would 'not answer that Mr. Murphy is not now gone 'about the business; but if you will impeach any 'to me of the road, or any thing else, I will step 'away to his worship Thrasher this instant, and 'I am sure I have interest enough with him to 'get you admitted an evidence.'

'And so,' cries Booth, 'you really take me for 'a highwayman.'

'No offence, captain, I hope,' said the keeper: 'as times go, there are many worse men in the 'world than those. Gentlemen may be driven to 'distress, and when they are, I know no more 'genteeler way than the road. It hath been many 'a brave man's case, to my knowledge, and men of 'as much honour too as any in the world.'

'Well, Sir,' said Booth, 'I assure you I am not 'that gentleman of honour you imagine me.'

Miss Matthews who had long understood the keeper no better than Mr. Booth, no sooner heard his meaning explained, than she was fired with greater indignation than the gentleman had expressed. 'How dare you, Sir,' said she to the keeper, 'insult a man of fashion, and who hath 'had the honour to bear his majesty's commission 'in the army? as you yourself own you know. 'If his misfortunes have sent him hither, sure we 'have no laws that will protect such a fellow as 'you in insulting him?' 'Fellow!' muttered the keeper—'I would not advise you, Madam, to use 'such language to me.'—'Do you dare threaten 'me?' replied Miss Matthews in a rage; 'Venture 'in the least instance to exceed your authority with 'regard to me, and I will prosecute you with the 'utmost vengeance.'

A scene of very high altercation now ensued, till Booth interposed, and quieted the keeper, who was, perhaps, enough inclined to an accommodation; for, in truth, he waged unequal war. He was besides unwilling to incense Miss Matthews, whom he expected to be bailed out the next day, and who had more money left than he intended she should carry out of the prison with her; and as for any violent or unjustifiable methods, the lady had discovered much too great a spirit to be in danger of them. The governor, therefore, in a very gentle tone, declared, that if he had given any offence to the gentleman, he heartily asked his pardon; that if he had known him to be really a captain, he should not have entertained any such suspicions; but the captain was a very common title in that place, and belonged to several gentlemen that had never been in the army, or at most, had rid private

like himself. ‘ To be sure, captain,’ said he, ‘ as
‘ you yourself own, your dress is not very mili-
‘ tary ;’ (for he had on a plain fustian suit) ‘ and
‘ besides, as the lawyer says, *noscitur a sosir*, is a
‘ very good rule. And I don’t believe there is a
‘ greater rascal upon earth than that same Robin-
‘ son that I was talking of. Nay, I assure you, I
‘ wish there may be no mischief hatching against
‘ you. But if there is, I will do all I can with the
‘ lawyer to prevent it. To be sure, Mr. Murphy
‘ is one of the cleverest men in the world at the
‘ law : that even his enemies must own ; and as
‘ I recommend him to all the business I can
‘ (and it is not a little to be sure that arises in this
‘ place), why one good turn deserves another.
‘ And I may expect that he will not be concerned
‘ in any plot to ruin any friend of mine ; at least
‘ when I desire him not. I am sure he could not
‘ be an honest man if he would.’

Booth was then satisfied that Mr. Robinson, whom he did not yet know by name, was the gamester who had won his money at play. And now, Miss Matthews, who had very impatiently borne this long interruption, prevailed on the keeper to withdraw. As soon as he was gone, Mr. Booth began to felicitate her upon the news of the wounded gentleman being in a fair likelihood of recovery. To which, after short silence, she answered, ‘ There is something, perhaps, which you
‘ will not easily guess, that makes your congratu-
‘ lation more agreeable to me than the first ac-
‘ count I heard of the villain’s having escaped the
‘ fate he deserves ; for, I do assure you, at first, it
‘ did not make me amends for the interruption of
‘ my curiosity. Now, I hope, we shall be dis-
‘ turbed no more, till you have finished your whole
‘ story.—You left off, I think, somewhere in the

'struggle about leaving Amelia, the happy Amelia.' —'And can you call her happy at such a period?' cries Booth. 'Happy, ay, happy, in any situation,' answered Miss Matthews, 'with such a husband. I, at least, may well think so, who have experienced the very reverse of her fortune; but I was not born to be happy. I may say with the poet:

"The blackest ink of fate was sure my lot,
"And when fate writ my name, it made a blot."

'Nay, nay, dear Miss Matthews,' answered Booth, 'you must, and shall banish such gloomy thoughts. Fate hath, I hope, many happy days in store for you.'——'Do you believe it, Mr. Booth?' replied she, 'indeed you know the contrary—You must know—For you can't have forgot. No Amelia in the world can have quite obliterated—Forgetfulness is not in our own power. If it was, indeed, I have reason to think—But I know not what I am saying.—Pray do, proceed in that story.'

Booth so immediately complied with this request, that it is possible he was pleased with it. To say the truth, if all which unwittingly dropt from Miss Matthews was put together, some conclusions might, it seems, be drawn from the whole, which could not convey a very agreeable idea to a constant husband. Booth, therefore, proceeded to relate what is written in the third book of this history.

AMELIA.

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

In which Mr. Booth resumes his Story.

'IF I am not mistaken, Madam,' continued Booth, 'I was just going to acquaint you with 'the doctor's opinion, when we were interrupted 'by the keeper.

'The doctor having heard counsel on both sides, 'that is to say, Mrs. Harris for my staying, and 'Miss Betty for my going, at last delivered his 'own sentiments. As for Amelia, she sat silent, 'drowned in her tears; nor was I myself in a much 'better situation.

"As the commissions are not signed," said the doctor, "I think you may be said to remain in "your former regiment; and therefore I think "you ought to go on this expedition; your duty "to your king and country, whose bread you "have eaten, requires it; and this is a duty of "too high a nature to admit the least deficiency. "Regard to your character likewise requires you "to go; for the world, which might justly blame

"your staying at home, if the case was even fairly "stated, will not deal so honestly by you: you "must expect to have every circumstance against "you heightened, and most of what makes for "your defence omitted; and thus you will be "stigmatised as a coward, without any palliation. "As the malicious disposition of mankind is too "well known, and the cruel pleasure which they "take in destroying the reputations of others; the "use we are to make of this knowledge is to afford "no handle to reproach: for bad as the world is, "it seldom falls on any man who hath not given "some slight cause for censure, though this, per-"haps, is often aggravated ten thousand fold; "and when we blame the malice of the aggrava-"tion, we ought not to forget our own impru-"dence in giving the occasion. Remember, my "boy, your honour is at stake; and you know how "nice the honour of a soldier is in these cases. "This is a treasure, which he must be your enemy "indeed who would attempt to rob you of.—— "Therefore, you ought to consider every one as "your enemy, who, by desiring you to stay, would "rob you of your honour."

"Do you hear that, sister?" cries Miss Betty.— "Yes, I do hear it," answered Amelia, with more spirit than I ever saw her exert before, "and "would preserve his honour at the expense of my "life. I will preserve it if it should be at that ex-"pense; and since it is Dr. Harrison's opinion that "he ought to go, I give my consent. Go, my "dear husband," cried she, falling upon her knees, "may every angel of heaven guard and preserve "you."—I cannot repeat her words without being 'affected,' said he, wiping his eyes, 'the excel-'lence of that woman, no words can paint: Miss

'Matthews, she hath every perfection in human 'nature.

'I will not tire you with the repetition of any 'more that past on that occasion; nor with the 'quarrel that ensued between Mrs. Harris and the 'doctor; for the old lady could not submit to my 'leaving her daughter in her present condition. 'She fell severely on the army, and cursed the day 'in which her daughter was married to a soldier, 'not sparing the doctor for having had some share 'in the match. I will omit, likewise, the tender 'scene, which past between Amelia and myself 'previous to my departure.'

'Indeed, I beg you would not,' cries Miss Matthews, 'nothing delights me more than scenes of 'tenderness. I should be glad to know, if pos-'sible, every syllable which was uttered on both 'sides.'

'I will indulge you then,' cries Booth, 'as far 'as is in my power. Indeed, I believe, I am able 'to recollect much the greatest part; for the im-'pression is never to be effaced from my memory.'

He then proceeded as Miss Matthews desired; but lest all our readers should not be of her opinion, we will, according to our usual custom, endeavour to accommodate ourselves to every taste, and shall therefore place this scene in a chapter by itself, which we desire all our readers who do not love, or who, perhaps, do not know the pleasure of tenderness, to pass over; since they may do this without any prejudice to the thread of the narrative.

CHAP. II.

Containing a Scene of the tender Kind.

'THE doctor, Madam,' continued Booth, 'spent
'his evening at Mrs. Harris's house, where I sat
'with him whilst he smoaked his pillow pipe, as
'his phrase is. Amelia was retired above half an
'hour to her chamber, before I went to her. At
'my entrance, I found her on her knees, a posture
'in which I never disturbed her. In a few minutes
'she arose, came to me, and embracing me, said
'she had been praying for resolution to support the
'cruellest moments she had ever undergone, or could
'possibly undergo. I reminded her how much more
'bitter a farewel would be on a death-bed, when
'we never could meet in this world, at least, again.
'I then endeavoured to lessen all those objects
'which alarmed her most, and particularly the dan-
'ger I was to encounter; upon which head I
'seemed a little to comfort her: but the probable
'length of my absence, and the certain length of my
'voyage, were circumstances which no oratory
'of mine could even palliate. "Oh, heavens!"
'said she, bursting into tears, "can I bear to
"think that hundreds, thousands, for aught I
"know, of miles or leagues; that lands and seas
"are between us. What is the prospect from that
"mount in our garden, where I have sat so many
"happy hours with my Billy? what is the dis-
"tance between that and the farthest hill which
"we see from thence, compared to the distance
"which will be between us! you cannot wonder
"at this idea; you must remember, my Billy, at
"this place, this very thought came formerly into

" my foreboding mind. I then begged you to " leave the army. Why would you not comply? " —did I not tell you then that the smallest cot- " tage we could survey from the mount, would be " with you a paradise to me; it would be so still " —why can't my Billy think so? am I so much " his superior in love? where is the dishonour, " Billy? or if there be any, will it reach our ears " in our little hut? are glory and fame, and not " his Amelia, the happiness of my husband? go " then purchase them at my expense. You will " pay a few sighs, perhaps, a few tears at parting, " and then new scenes will drive away the thoughts " of poor Amelia from your bosom: but what as- " sistance shall I have in my affliction? not that " any change of scene could drive you one mo- " ment from my remembrance; yet here every " object I behold will place your loved idea in " the liveliest manner before my eyes. This is " the bed in which you have reposed; that is the " chair on which you sat. Upon these boards you " have stood. These books you have read to me. " Can I walk among our beds of flowers, without " viewing your favourites, nay, those which you " have planted with your own hands? can I see " one beauty from our beloved mount, which you " have not pointed out to me?"—Thus she went ' on, the woman, Madam, you see, still prevailing.' —' Since you mention it,' says Miss Matthews, with a smile, ' I own the same observation oc- ' curred to me. It is too natural to us to consider ' ourselves only, Mr. Booth.'—' You shall hear,' he cried.—' at last, the thoughts of her present ' condition suggested themselves.'——" But if," said she, " my situation, even in health, will be so " intolerable, how shall I, in the danger and ago- " nies of child-birth, support your absence!"—

'Here she stopped, and looking on me with all 'the tenderness imaginable, cried out, "And am "I then such a wretch to wish for your presence "at such a season? ought I not to rejoice that "you are out of the hearing of my cries or the "knowledge of my pains? if I die, will you not "have escaped the horrors of a parting, ten thou- "sand times more dreadful than this? go, go, my "Billy; the very circumstance which made me "most dread your departure, hath perfectly re- "conciled me to it. I perceive clearly now that I "was only wishing to support my own weakness "with your strength, and to relieve my own pains "at the price of yours. Believe me, my love, I am "ashamed of myself."—I caught her in my arms 'with raptures not to be exprest in words, called 'her my heroine; sure none ever better deserved 'that name: after which we remained for some 'time speechless, and locked in each other's em- 'braces.'—'I am convinced,' said Miss Matthews, with a sigh, 'there are moments in life worth pur- 'chasing with worlds.'—

'At length the fatal morning came. I endea- 'voured to hide every pang of my heart, and to 'wear the utmost gaiety in my countenance. 'Amelia acted the same part. In these assumed 'characters we met the family at breakfast; at 'their breakfast, I mean; for we were both full 'already. The doctor had spent above an hour 'that morning in discourse with Mrs. Harris, and 'had in some measure reconciled her to my de- 'parture. He now made use of every art to relieve the 'poor distressed Amelia; not by inveighing against 'the folly of grief, or by seriously advising her not 'to grieve; both which were sufficiently performed 'by Miss Betty. The doctor, on the contrary, had 'recourse to every means which might cast a veil

'over the idea of grief, and raise comfortable 'images in my angel's mind. He endeavoured to 'lessen the supposed length of my absence, by dis-'coursing on matters which were more distant in 'time. He said, he intended next year to rebuild 'a part of his parsonage-house.—" And you, cap-" tain," says he, " shall lay the corner stone, I pro-" mise you ;" with many other instances of the 'like nature, which produced, I believe, some 'good effect on us both.

'Amelia spoke but little ; indeed more tears than 'words dropt from her ; however she seemed re-'solved to bear her affliction with resignation. But 'when the dreadful news arrived that the horses 'were ready, and I, having taken my leave of all 'the rest, at last approached her ; she was unable 'to support the conflict with nature any longer ; 'and clinging round my neck, she cried.—" Fare-" wel, farewel for ever ; for I shall never, never, " see you more." At which words the blood en-'tirely forsook her lovely cheeks, and she became 'a lifeless corpse in my arms.

'Amelia continued so long motionless, that the 'doctor, as well as Mrs. Harris, began to be under 'the most terrible apprehensions, so they informed 'me afterwards ; for at that time I was incapable 'of making any observation. I had indeed very 'little more use of my senses than the dear crea-'ture whom I supported. At length, however, 'we were all delivered from our fears ; and life 'again visited the loveliest mansion that human 'nature ever afforded it.

'I had been, and yet was, so terrified with what 'had happened, and Amelia continued yet so 'weak and ill, that I determined, whatever might 'be the consequence, not to leave her that day ; 'which resolution she was no sooner acquainted

'with, than she fell on her knees, crying, "Good
" Heaven! I thank thee for this reprieve at least.
" Oh! that every hour of my future life could be
" crammed into this dear day."

' Our good friend the doctor remained with us. 'He said, he had intended to visit a family in some 'affliction; but I don't know, says he, why I 'should ride a dozen miles after affliction, when 'we have enough here. Of all mankind the doc-'tor is the best of comforters. As his excessive 'good-nature makes him take vast delight in the 'office; so his great penetration into the human 'mind, joined to his great experience, renders him 'the most wonderful proficient in it; and he so 'well knows when to sooth, when to reason, and 'when to ridicule, that he never applies any of 'those arts improperly, which is almost univer-'sally the case with the physicians of the mind, 'and which it requires very great judgment and 'dexterity to avoid.

' The doctor principally applied himself to ridi-'culing the dangers of the siege, in which he suc-'ceeded so well, that he sometimes forced a smile 'even into the face of Amelia. But what most 'comforted her, were the arguments he used to 'convince her of the probability of my speedy, if 'not immediate return. He said, the general opi-'nion was, that the place would be taken before 'our arrival there. In which case, we should have 'nothing more to do, than to make the best of our 'way home again.

' Amelia was so lulled by these arts, that she 'passed the day much better than I expected. 'Though the doctor could not make pride strong 'enough to conquer love; yet, he exalted the for-'mer to make some stand against the latter; inso-'much that my poor Amelia, I believe, more than

'once, flattered herself, to speak the language of 'the world, that her reason had gained an entire 'victory over her passion; till love brought up a 'reinforcement, if I may use that term, of tender 'ideas, and bore down all before him.

'In the evening, the doctor and I passed another 'half hour together, when he proposed to me to 'endeavour to leave Amelia asleep in the morn-'ing, and promised me to be at hand when she 'awaked, and to support her with all the assist-'ance in his power. He added, that nothing was 'more foolish, than for friends to take leave of 'each other. It is true, indeed, says he, in the 'common acquaintance and friendship of the 'world, this is a very harmless ceremony; but 'between two persons, who really love each other, 'the church of Rome never invented a penance 'half so severe as this, which we absurdly impose 'on ourselves.

'I greatly approved the doctor's proposal; 'thanked him, and promised, if possible, to put it 'in execution. He then shook me by the hand, and 'heartily wished me well, saying, in his blunt 'way; "Well, boy, I hope to see thee crowned "with laurels at thy return; one comfort I have "at least, that stone walls and a sea will prevent "thee from running away."

'When I had left the doctor, I repaired to my 'Amelia, whom I found in her chamber, em-'ployed in a very different manner from what she 'had been the preceding night; she was busy in 'packing up some trinkets in a casket, which she 'desired me to carry with me. This casket was 'her own work, and she had just fastened it as I 'came to her.

'Her eyes very plainly discovered what had 'passed while she was engaged in her work; how-

'ever, her countenance was now serene, and she 'spoke, at least, with some cheerfulness. But 'after some time, " You must take care of this " casket, Billy," said she, " You must, indeed, " Billy,—for—" here passion almost choaked her, 'till a flood of tears gave her relief, and then she 'proceeded—" For I shall be the happiest woman " that ever was born when I see it again."—I told 'her, with the blessing of God that day would 'soon come. " Soon !" answered she,—" No, Billy, " not soon ; a week is an age ;—but yet the happy " day may come. It shall, it must, it will !—Yes, " Billy, we shall meet never to part again ;—even " in this world I hope."——Pardon my weakness, 'Miss Matthews, but upon my soul I cannot help 'it,' cried he, wiping his eyes—' Well, I wonder 'at your patience, and I will try it no longer. 'Amelia tired out with so long a struggle between 'variety of passions, and having not closed her 'eyes during three successive nights, towards the 'morning fell into a profound sleep. In which 'sleep I left her—and having drest myself with all 'the expedition imaginable, singing, whistling, 'hurrying, attempting by every method to banish 'thought, I mounted my horse, which I had over 'night ordered to be ready, and galloped away 'from that house where all my treasure was de-'posited.

'Thus, Madam, I have, in obedience to your 'commands, run through a scene, which, if it hath 'been tiresome to you, you must yet acquit me of 'having obtruded upon you. This I am convinced 'of, that no one is capable of tasting such a scene 'who hath not a heart full of tenderness, and per-'haps not even then, unless he hath been in the 'same situation.'

CHAP. III.

In which Mr. Booth sets forward on his Journey.

'WELL, Madam, we have now taken our 'leave of Amelia. I rode a full mile before I once 'suffered myself to look back; but now being 'come to the top of a little hill, the last spot I 'knew which could give me a prospect of Mrs. 'Harris's house, my resolution failed: I stopt and 'cast my eyes backward. Shall I tell you what I 'felt at that instant? I do assure you I am not 'able. So many tender ideas crowded at once 'into my mind, that, if I may use the expression, 'they almost dissolved my heart. And now, Ma-'dam, the most unfortunate accident came first 'into my head. This was, that I had in the hurry 'and confusion left the dear casket behind me. 'The thought of going back at first suggested 'itself; but the consequences of that were too ap-'parent. I therefore resolved to send my man, and 'in the mean time to ride on softly on my road. 'He immediately executed my orders, and after 'some time, feeding my eyes with that delicious 'and yet heart-felt prospect, I at last turned my 'horse to descend the hill, and proceeded about a 'hundred yards, when, considering with myself, 'that I should lose no time by a second indul-'gence, I again turned back, and once more feast-'ed my sight with the same painful pleasure, till 'my man returned, bringing me the casket, and an 'account that Amelia still continued in the sweet 'sleep I left her.—I now suddenly turned my horse 'for the last time, and with the utmost resolution 'pursued my journey.

'I perceived my man at his return—But before I mention any thing of him, it may be proper, Madam, to accquaint you who he was. He was the foster-brother of my Amelia. This young fellow had taken it into his head to go into the army; and he was desirous to serve under my command. The doctor consented to discharge him; his mother at last yielded to his importunities; and I was very easily prevailed on to list one of the handsomest young fellows in England.

'You will easily believe I had some little partiality to one whose milk Amelia had sucked; but as he had never seen the regiment, I had no opportunity to shew him any great mark of favour. Indeed, he waited on me as my servant; and I treated him with all the tenderness which can be used to one in that station.

'When I was about to change into the horse-guards, the poor fellow began to droop, fearing that he should no longer be in the same corps with me, though certainly that would not have been the case. However, he had never mentioned one word of his dissatisfaction.—He is indeed a fellow of a noble spirit; but when he heard that I was to remain where I was, and that we were to go to Gibraltar together, he fell into transports of joy, little short of madness. In short, the poor fellow had imbibed a very strong affection for me; though this was what I knew nothing of till long after.

'When he returned to me then, as I was saying, with the casket, I observed his eyes all over blubbered with tears. I rebuked him a little too rashly on this occasion. Heyday! says I, what is the meaning of this; I hope I have not a milk-sop with me. If I thought you would shew such

'a face to the enemy, I would leave you behind,—
'Your honour need not fear that, answered he, I
'shall find nobody there that I shall love well
'enough to make me cry. I was highly pleased
'with this answer, in which I thought I could
'discover both sense and spirit. I then asked him
'what had occasioned those tears since he had left
'me (for he had no sign of any at that time);
'and whether he had seen his mother at Mrs. Har-
'ris's? He answered in the negative, and begged
'that I would ask him no more questions; adding
'that he was not very apt to cry, and he hoped
'he should never give me such another oppor-
'tunity of blaming him. I mention this only as an
'instance of his affection towards me; for I never
'could account for those tears any otherwise than
'by placing them to the account of that distress
'in which he left me at that time. We travelled
'full forty miles that day without baiting, when
'arriving at the inn where I intended to rest that
'night, I retired immediately to my chamber,
'with my dear Amelia's casket, the opening of
'which was the nicest repast, and to which every
'other hunger gave way.

'It is impossible to mention to you all the little
'matters with which Amelia had furnished this
'casket. It contained medicines of all kinds,
'which her mother, who was the Lady Bountiful
'of that country, had supplied her with. The
'most valuable of all to me was a lock of her dear
'hair, which I have from that time to this worn in
'my bosom. What would I have then given for
'a little picture of my dear angel, which she had
'lost from her chamber about a month before?
'and which we had the highest reason in the
'world to imagine her sister had taken away; for

'the suspicion lay only between her and Amelia's 'maid, who was of all creatures the honestest, and 'whom her mistress had often trusted with things 'of much greater value; for the picture which 'was set in gold, and had two or three little 'diamonds round it, was worth about twelve 'guineas only; whereas Amelia left jewels in her 'care of much greater value.'

'Sure,' cries Miss Matthews, 'she could not be 'such a paltry pilferer.'

'Not on account of the gold or the jewels,' cries Booth. 'We imputed it to mere spite, with 'which I assure you she abounds; and she knew 'that next to Amelia herself, there was nothing 'which I valued so much as this little picture; 'for such a resemblance did it bear of the original, 'that Hogarth himself did never, I believe, draw 'a stronger likeness. Spite therefore was the only 'motive to this cruel depredation: and indeed her 'behaviour on the occasion sufficiently convinced 'us both of the justice of our suspicion, though 'we neither of us durst accuse her; and she her-'self had the assurance to insist very strongly '(though she could not prevail) with Amelia, to 'turn away her innocent maid, saying, she would 'not live in the house with a thief.'

Miss Matthews now discharged some curses on Miss Betty, not much worth repeating, and then Mr. Booth proceeded in his relation.

CHAP. IV.

A Sea-Piece.

'THE next day we joined the regiment, which 'was soon after to embark. Nothing but mirth 'and jollity were in the countenance of every officer 'and soldier; and as I now met several friends 'whom I had not seen for above a year before, I 'passed several happy hours, in which poor Ame-'lia's image seldom obtruded itself to interrupt my 'pleasure. To confess the truth, dear Miss Mat-'thews, the tenderest of passions is capable of sub-'siding; nor is absence from our dearest friends so 'unsupportable as it may at first appear. Distance 'of time and place do really cure what they seem 'to aggravate; and taking leave of our friends re-'sembles taking leave of the world; concerning 'which it hath been often said, that it is not death, 'but dying, which is terrible.'—Here Miss Matthews burst into a fit of laughter, and cried, 'I 'sincerely ask your pardon; but I cannot help 'laughing at the gravity of your philosophy.' Booth answered, That the doctrine of the passions had been always his favourite study; that he was convinced every man acted entirely from that passion which was uppermost; 'Can I then think,' said he, 'without entertaining the utmost contempt for 'myself, that any pleasure upon earth could drive 'the thoughts of Amelia one instant from my 'mind?

'At length we embarked aboard a transport, and 'sailed for Gibraltar; but the wind, which was at 'first fair, soon chopped about; so that we were 'obliged, for several days, to beat to windward, as

'the sea phrase is. During this time, the taste 'which I had of a seafaring life did not appear ex- 'tremely agreeable. We rolled up and down in a 'little narrow cabin, in which were three officers, 'all of us extremely sea-sick; our sickness being 'much aggravated by the motion of the ship, 'by the view of each other, and by the stench of 'the men. But this was but a little taste indeed 'of the misery which was to follow; for we were 'got about six leagues to the westward of Scilly, 'when a violent storm arose at north-east, which 'soon raised the waves to the height of mountains. 'The horror of this is not to be adequately de- 'scribed to those who have never seen the like. 'The storm began in the evening, and as the clouds 'brought on the night apace, it was soon entirely 'dark; nor had we, during many hours, any other 'light than what was caused by the jarring ele- 'ments, which frequently sent forth flashes, or ra- 'ther streams of fire; and whilst these presented 'the most dreadful objects to our eyes, the roaring 'of the winds, the dashing of the waves against the 'ship and each other, formed a sound altogether as 'horrible for our ears; while our ship, sometimes 'lifted up as it were to the skies, and sometimes 'swept away at once as into the lowest abyss, 'seemed to be the sport of the winds and seas. The 'captain himself almost gave all for lost, and exprest 'his apprehension of being inevitably cast on the 'rocks of Scilly, and beat to pieces. And now, 'while some on board were addressing themselves 'to the Supreme Being, and others applying for 'comfort to strong liquors, my whole thoughts 'were entirely engaged by my Amelia. A thou- 'sand tender ideas crowded into my mind. I can 'truly say, that I had not a single consideration 'about myself, in which she was not concerned.

'Dying to me was leaving her; and the fear of 'never seeing her more, was a dagger stuck in my 'heart. Again, all the terrors with which this 'storm, if it reached her ears, must fill her gentle 'mind on my account, and the agonies which she 'must undergo, when she heard of my fate, gave 'me such intolerable pangs, that I now repented 'my resolution, and wished, I own I wished, that 'I had taken her advice, and preferred love and a 'cottage to all the dazzling charms of honour.

'While I was tormenting myself with those me-'ditations, and had concluded myself as certainly 'lost, the master came into the cabin, and with a 'cheerful voice, assured us that we had escaped 'the danger, and that we had certainly past to the 'westward of the rock. This was comfortable news 'to all present; and my captain, who had been 'some time on his knees, leapt suddenly up, and 'testified his joy with a great oath.

'A person unused to the sea would have been 'astonished at the satisfaction which now discover-'ed itself in the master or in any on board; for the 'storm still raged with great violence, and the day-'light which now appeared, presented us with sights 'of horror sufficient to terrify minds which were 'not absolute slaves to the passion of fear; but so 'great is the force of habit, that what inspires a 'landman with the highest apprehension of danger, 'gives not the least concern to a sailor, to whom 'rocks and quicksands are almost the only objects 'of terror.

'The master, however, was a little mistaken in 'the present instance; for he had not left the cabin 'above an hour, before my man came running to 'me, and acquainted me that the ship was half full 'of water; that the sailors were going to hoist out 'the boat and save themselves, and begged me to

'come that moment along with him, as I tendered 'my preservation. With this account, which was 'conveyed to me in a whisper, I acquainted both 'the captain and ensign; and we all together im-'mediately mounted the deck, where we found the 'master making use of all his oratory to persuade 'the sailors that the ship was in no danger; and at 'the same time employing all his authority to set 'the pumps a-going, which he assured them 'would keep the water under, and save his dear 'Lovely Peggy (for that was the name of the ship), 'which he swore he loved as dearly as his own 'soul.

'Indeed this sufficiently appeared; for the leak 'was so great, and the water flowed in so plenti-'fully, that his Lovely Peggy was half filled, before 'he could be brought to think of quitting her; 'but now the boat was brought alongside the ship; 'and the master himself, notwithstanding all his 'love for her, quitted his ship, and leapt into the 'boat. Every man present attempted to follow 'his example, when I heard the voice of my ser-'vant roaring forth my name in a kind of agony. 'I made directly to the ship side, but was too late; 'for the boat, being already overladen, put directly 'off. And now, Madam, I am going to relate to 'you an instance of heroic affection in a poor fel-'low towards his master, to which love itself, even 'among persons of superior education, can produce 'but few similar instances. My poor man being 'unable to get me with him into the boat, leapt 'suddenly into the sea, and swam back to the ship; 'and when I gently rebuked him for his rashness, 'he answered, He chose rather to die with me, 'than to live to carry the account of my death to 'my Amelia; at the same time bursting into a 'flood of tears, he cried, "Good Heavens! what

" will that poor lady feel when she hears of this!"
' This tender concern for my dear love endeared
' the poor fellow more to me, than the gallant in-
' stance which he had just before given of his affec-
' tion towards myself.

' And now, Madam, my eyes were shocked with a sight, the horror of which can scarce be imagined: for the boat had scarce got four hundred yards from the ship, when it was swallowed up by the merciless waves, which now ran so high, that out of the number of persons which were in the boat none recovered the ship; though many of them we saw miserably perish before our eyes, some of them very near us, without any possibility of giving them the least assistance.

' But whatever we felt for them, we felt, I believe, more for ourselves, expecting every minute when we should share the same fate. Among the rest, one of our officers appeared quite stupified with fear. I never, indeed, saw a more miserable example of the great power of that passion: I must not, however, omit doing him justice, by saying, that I afterwards saw the same man behave well in an engagement, in which he was wounded. Though there likewise he was said to have betrayed the same passion of fear in his countenance.

' The other of our officers was no less stupified (if I may so express myself) with fool-hardiness, and seemed almost insensible of his danger. To say the truth, I have, from this and some other instances which I have seen, been almost inclined to think, that the courage as well as cowardice of fools proceeds from not knowing what is or what is not the proper object of fear; indeed, we may account for the extreme hardiness of some men, in the same manner as for the terrors of children

'at a bugbear. The child knows not but that the 'bugbear is the proper object of fear, the blockhead 'knows not that a cannon ball is so.

'As to the remaining part of the ship's crew, and 'the soldiery, most of them were dead drunk; and 'the rest were endeavouring, as fast as they could, 'to prepare for death in the same manner.

'In this dreadful situation we were taught that 'no human condition should inspire men with ab-'solute despair; for as the storm had ceased for 'some time, the swelling of the sea began consider-'ably to abate; and we now perceived the man of 'war which convoyed us, at no great distance astern. 'Those aboard her easily perceived our distress, 'and made towards us. When they came pretty 'near, they hoisted out two boats to our assistance. 'These no sooner approached the ship, than they 'were instantaneously filled, and I myself got a 'place in one of them, chiefly by the aid of my 'honest servant, of whose fidelity to me on all oc-'casions I cannot speak or think too highly. In-'deed, I got into the boat so much the more easily, 'as a great number on board the ship were render-'ed, by drink, incapable of taking any care for 'themselves. There was time, however, for the 'boat to pass and repass; so that when we came 'to call over names, three only, of all that remained 'in the ship, after the loss of her own boat, were 'missing.

'The captain, ensign, and myself were received 'with many congratulations by our officers on 'board the man of war.—The sea officers too, all 'except the captain, paid us their compliments, 'though these were of the rougher kind, and not 'without several jokes on our escape. As for the 'captain himself, we scarce saw him during many 'hours; and when he appeared, he presented a

'view of majesty beyond any that I had ever seen, 'The dignity which he preserved, did indeed give 'me rather the idea of a Mogul, or a Turkish emperor, than of any of the monarchs of Christendom. To say the truth, I could resemble his 'walk on the deck to nothing but to the image of 'Captain Gulliver strutting among the Lilliputians; 'he seemed to think himself a being of an order superior to all around him, and more especially to 'us of the land service. Nay, such was the behaviour of all the sea officers and sailors to us and 'our soldiers, that instead of appearing to be subjects of the same prince, engaged in one quarrel, 'and joined to support one cause; we landmen 'rather seemed to be captives on board an enemy's 'vessel. This is a grievous misfortune, and often 'proves so fatal to the service, that it is great 'pity some means could not be found of curing it.'

Here Mr. Booth stopt a while, to take breath. We will therefore give the same refreshment to the reader.

CHAP. V.

The Arrival of Booth at Gibraltar, with what there befel him.

'THE adventures,' continued Booth, 'which 'happened to me from this day till my arrival at 'Gibraltar, are not worth recounting to you. After 'a voyage, the remainder of which was tolerably 'prosperous, we arrived in that garrison, the natural strength of which is so well known to the 'whole world.

'About a week after my arrival, it was my for-
'tune to be ordered on a sally-party, in which my
'left leg was broke with a musket ball; and I should
'most certainly have either perished miserably, or
'must have owed my preservation to some of the
'enemy, had not my faithful servant carried me off
'on his shoulders, and afterwards, with the assist-
'ance of one of his comrades, brought me back
'into the garrison.

'The agony of my wound was so great, that it
'threw me into a fever, from whence my surgeon
'apprehended much danger. I now began again
'to feel for my Amelia, and for myself on her ac-
'count; and the disorder of my mind, occasioned
'by such melancholy contemplations, very highly
'aggravated the distemper of my body; insomuch
'that it would probably have proved fatal, had it
'not been for the friendship of one Captain James,
'an officer of our regiment, and an old acquaint-
'ance, who is undoubtedly one of the pleasantest
'companions, and one of the best-natured men in
'the world. This worthy man, who had a head and
'a heart perfectly adequate to every office of friend-
'ship, stayed with me almost day and night during
'my illness; and by strengthening my hopes, rais-
'ing my spirits, and cheering my thoughts, pre-
'served me from destruction.

'The behaviour of this man alone is a sufficient
'proof of the truth of my doctrine, that all men act
'entirely from their passions; for Bob James can
'never be supposed to act from any motive of vir-
'tue or religion; since he constantly laughs at both;
'and yet his conduct towards me alone demon-
'strates a degree of goodness, which, perhaps, few
'of the votaries of either virtue or religion can
'equal.'

'You need not take much pains,' answered Miss

Matthews, with a smile, 'to convince me of your 'doctrine. I have been always an advocate for the 'same. I look upon the two words you mention, 'to serve only as clokes under which hypocrisy may 'be the better enabled to cheat the world. I have 'been of that opinion ever since I read that charm- 'ing fellow Mandevil.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' answered Booth, 'I hope 'you do not agree with Mandevil neither, who 'hath represented human nature in a picture of 'the highest deformity. He hath left out of his 'system the best passion which the mind can pos- 'sess, and attempts to derive the effects or ener- 'gies of that passion, from the base impulses of 'pride or fear. Whereas it is as certain that love 'exists in the mind of man, as that its opposite 'hatred doth; and the same reasons will equally 'prove the existence of the one as the existence of 'the other.'

'I don't know, indeed,' replied the lady, 'I ne- 'ver thought much about the matter. This I know, 'that when I read Mandevil, I thought all he said 'was true; and I have been often told, that he 'proves religion and virtue to be only mere names. 'However, if he denies there is any such thing as 'love, that is most certainly wrong.—I am afraid 'I can give him the lie myself.'

'I will join with you, Madam, in that,' answer- ed Booth, 'at any time.'

'Will you join with me?' answered she, look- ing eagerly at him—'O Mr. Booth! I know not 'what I was going to say—What—Where did you 'leave off?—I would not interrupt you—but I am 'impatient to know something.'

'What, Madam?' cries Booth, 'If I can give 'you any satisfaction——'

'No, no,' said she, 'I must hear all, I would

'not for the world break the thread of your story
'—Besides, I am afraid to ask—Pray, pray, Sir,
'go on.'

'Well, Madam,' cries Booth, 'I think I was 'mentioning the extraordinary acts of friendship 'done me by Captain James; nor can I help 'taking notice of the almost unparalleled fidelity 'of poor Atkinson (for that was my man's name), 'who was not only constant in the assiduity of his 'attendance, but, during the time of my danger, 'demonstrated a concern for me which I can hardly 'account for, as my prevailing on his captain to 'make him a serjeant was the first favour he ever 'received at my hands, and this did not happen till 'I was almost perfectly recovered of my broken leg. 'Poor fellow! I shall never forget the extravagant 'joy his halbert gave him; I remember it the more, 'because it was one of the happiest days of my 'own life; for it was upon this day that I received 'a letter from my dear Amelia, after a long silence, 'acquainting me that she was out of all danger 'from her lying-in.

'I was now once more able to perform my duty; 'when (so unkind was the fortune of war) the se- 'cond time I mounted the guard, I received a vio- 'lent contusion from the bursting of a bomb. I was 'felled to the ground, where I lay breathless by the 'blow, till honest Atkinson came to my assistance, 'and conveyed me to my room, where a surgeon 'immediately attended me.

'The injury I had now received was much more 'dangerous in my surgeon's opinion than the 'former; it caused me to spit blood, and was at- 'tended with a fever, and other bad symptoms; 'so that very fatal consequences were appre- 'hended.

'In this situation, the image of my Amelia haunt-

'ed me day and night: and the apprehensions of 'never seeing her more were so intolerable, that I 'had thoughts of resigning my commission, and re-'turning home, weak as I was, that I might have, 'at least, the satisfaction of dying in the arms of 'my love. Captain James, however, persisted in 'dissuading me from any such resolution. He told 'me, my honour was too much concerned, at-'tempted to raise my hopes of recovery to the ut-'most of his power; but chiefly he prevailed on 'me by suggesting, that if the worst which I ap-'prehended, should happen, it was much better 'for Amelia, that she should be absent than present 'in so melancholy an hour. "I know," cried he, "the extreme joy which must arise in you from "meeting again with Amelia, and the comfort of "expiring in her arms; but consider what she "herself must endure upon the dreadful occasion, "and you would not wish to purchase any hap-"piness at the price of so much pain to her." 'This argument, at length, prevailed on me; and 'it was after many long debates resolved, that she 'should not even know my present condition, till 'my doom either for life or death was absolutely 'fixed.'

'Oh! Heavens! how great! how generous!' cried Miss Matthews. 'Booth, thou art a noble 'fellow; and I scarce think there is a woman upon 'earth worthy so exalted a passion.'

Booth made a modest answer to the compliment which Miss Matthews had paid him. This drew more civilities from the lady; and these again more acknowledgements. All which we shall pass by, and proceed with our history.

CHAP. VI.

Containing Matters which will please some Readers.

'TWO months and more, had I continued in a 'state of uncertainty, sometimes with more flatter-'ing, and sometimes with more alarming symp-'toms; when one afternoon poor Atkinson came 'running into my room, all pale and out of breath, 'and begged me not to be surprised at his news. 'I asked him eagerly what was the matter, and if 'it was any thing concerning Amelia?——I had 'scarce uttered the dear name, when she herself 'rushed into the room, and ran hastily to me, cry-'ing, "Yes, it is, it is your Amelia herself!"

'There is nothing so difficult to describe, and 'generally so dull when described, as scenes of ex-'cessive tenderness.'

'Can you think so?' says Miss Matthews; sure-'ly there is nothing so charming!—O! Mr. Booth, 'our sex is d—ned by the want of tenderness in 'yours—O were they all like you—certainly no 'man was ever your equal.'

'Indeed, Madam,' cries Booth, 'you honour me 'too much—But—well—when the first transports 'of our meeting were over, Amelia began gently 'to chide me for having concealed my illness from 'her; for in three letters which I had writ her 'since the accident had happened, there was not 'the least mention of it, or any hint given by which 'she could possibly conclude I was otherwise than 'in perfect health. And when I had excused my-'self, by assigning the true reason, she cried— '"O Mr. Booth! and do you know so little of your "Amelia, as to think I could or would survive you!

"—would it not be better for one dreadful sight to "break my heart all at once, than to break it by "degrees?—O Billy! can any thing pay me for "the loss of this embrace!"——'But I ask your 'pardon——how ridiculous doth my fondness ap'pear in your eyes!'

'How often,' answered she, 'shall I assert the 'contrary?——What would you have me say, 'Mr. Booth? shall I tell you I envy Mrs. Booth 'of all the women in the world? would you be'lieve me if I did? I hope you—What am I say'ing?——Pray make no farther apology, but go 'on.'

'After a scene,' continued he, 'too tender to be 'conceived by many, Amelia informed me, that 'she had received a letter from an unknown hand, 'acquainting her with my misfortune, and advising 'her, if she ever desired to see me more, to come 'directly to Gibraltar. She said, she should not 'have delayed a moment, after receiving this letter, 'had not the same ship brought her one from me 'written with rather more than usual gaiety, and 'in which there was not the least mention of my 'indisposition. This, she said, greatly puzzled her 'and her mother, and the worthy divine endeavour'ed to persuade her to give credit to my letter, and 'to impute the other to a species of wit with which 'the world greatly abounds. This consists entirely 'in doing various kinds of mischief to our fellow'creatures; by belying one, deceiving another, ex'posing a third, and drawing in a fourth to expose 'himself: in short, by making some the objects 'of laughter, others of contempt; and indeed 'not seldom, by subjecting them to very great 'inconveniencies, perhaps to ruin, for the sake of 'a jest.

'Mrs. Harris and the doctor derived the letter

'from this species of wit. Miss Betty, however, 'was of a different opinion, and advised poor Ame-'lia to apply to an officer whom the governor had 'sent over in the same ship, by whom the report of 'my illness was so strongly confirmed, that Amelia 'immediately resolved on her voyage.

'I had a great curiosity to know the author of 'this letter; but not the least trace of it could be 'discovered. The only person with whom I lived 'in any great intimacy was Captain James; and 'he, Madam, from what I have already told you, 'you will think to be the last person I could sus-'pect; besides, he declared upon his honour, that 'he knew nothing of the matter; and no man's 'honour is, I believe, more sacred. There was 'indeed an ensign of another regiment who knew 'my wife, and who had sometimes visited me in 'my illness; but he was a very unlikely man to 'interest himself much in any affairs which did not 'concern him; and he too declared he knew no-'thing of it.'

'And did you never discover this secret?' cried Miss Matthews.

'Never to this day,' answered Booth.

'I fancy,' said she, 'I could give a shrewd guess '——What so likely as that Mrs. Booth, when 'you left her, should have given her foster-brother 'orders to send her word of whatever befel you? '—Yet stay—that could not be neither; for then 'she would not have doubted whether she should 'leave dear England on the receipt of the letter.—'No, it must have been by some other means!—'yet that I own appeared extremely natural to me; 'for if I had been left by such a husband, I think 'I should have pursued the same method.'

'No, Madam,' cried Booth, 'it must have been 'conveyed by some other channel; for my Ame-

'lia, I am certain, was entirely ignorant of the 'manner; and as for poor Atkinson, I am con- 'vinced he would not have ventured to take such a 'step without acquainting me. Besides, the poor 'fellow had, I believe, such a regard for my wife, 'out of gratitude for the favours she hath done 'his mother, that I make no doubt he was highly 'rejoiced at her absence from my melancholy 'scene. Well, whoever writ it, is a matter very 'immaterial; yet, as it seemed so odd and unac- 'countable an incident, I could not help mention- 'ing it.

'From the time of Amelia's arrival, nothing re- 'markable happened till my perfect recovery, un- 'less I should observe her remarkable behaviour, 'so full of care and tenderness, that it was perhaps 'without a parallel.'

'O no, Mr. Booth,' cries the lady—'It is fully 'equalled, I am sure, by your gratitude. There 'is nothing, I believe, so rare as gratitude in your 'sex, especially in husbands. So kind a remem- 'brance is, indeed, more than a return to such an 'obligation; for where is the mighty obligation 'which a woman confers, who being possessed of 'an inestimable jewel, is so kind to herself as to 'be careful and tender of it? I do not say this to 'lessen your opinion of Mrs. Booth. I have no 'doubt but that she loves you as well as she is ca- 'pable. But I would not have you think so mean- 'ly of our sex, as to imagine there are not a thou- 'sand women susceptible of true tenderness towards 'a meritorious man.——Believe me, Mr. Booth, 'if I had received such an account of an accident 'having happened to such a husband, a mother 'and a parson would not have held me a moment. 'I should have leapt into the first fishing-boat I 'could have found, and bid defiance to the winds

'and waves.——Oh! there is no true tenderness
'but in a woman of spirit. I would not be understood all this while to reflect on Mrs. Booth. I am only defending the cause of my sex; for, upon my soul, such compliments to a wife are a satire on all the rest of womankind.'

'Sure you jest, Miss Matthews,' answered Booth, with a smile; 'however, if you please, I will proceed in my story.'

CHAP. VII.

The Captain, continuing his Story, recounts some Particulars which, we doubt not, to many good People, will appear unnatural.

'I WAS no sooner recovered from my indisposition, than Amelia herself fell ill. This, I am afraid, was occasioned by the fatigues which I could not prevent her from undergoing on my account; for as my disease went off with violent sweats, during which the surgeon strictly ordered that I should lie by myself, my Amelia could not be prevailed upon to spend many hours in her own bed. During my restless fits she would sometimes read to me several hours together; indeed, it was not without difficulty that she ever quitted my bedside. These fatigues, added to the uneasiness of her mind, overpowered her weak spirits, and threw her into one of the worst disorders that can possibly attend a woman. A disorder very common among the ladies, and our physicians have not agreed upon its name. Some call it the fever on the spirits,

'some a nervous fever, some the vapours, and some 'the hysterics.'

'O say no more,' cries Miss Matthews; 'I pity 'you, I pity you from my soul. A man had better 'be plagued with all the curses of Egypt than with 'a vapourish wife.'

'Pity me! Madam,' answered Booth, 'pity ra-'ther that dear creature, who, from her love and 'care of my unworthy self, contracted a distemper, 'the horrors of which are scarce to be imagined. 'It is, indeed, a sort of complication of all diseases 'together, with almost madness added to them. 'In this situation, the siege being at an end, the 'governor gave me leave to attend my wife to 'Montpelier, the air of which was judged to be 'most likely to restore her to health. Upon this 'occasion she wrote to her mother to desire a re-'mittance, and set forth the melancholy condition 'of her health, and her necessity for money, in such 'terms as would have touched any bosom not void 'of humanity, though a stranger to the unhappy 'sufferer. Her sister answered it, and I believe I 'have a copy of the answer in my pocket. I keep 'it by me as a curiosity, and you would think it 'more so, could I shew you my Amelia's letter. 'He then searched his pocket-book, and finding 'the letter among many others, he read it in the 'following words:'

"DEAR SISTER,

"My mamma being much disordered, hath "commanded me to tell you, she is both shocked "and surprised at your extraordinary request, or, "as she chuses to call it, order for money. You "know my dear, she says, that your marriage "with this red-coat man was entirely against her "consent, and the opinion of all your family (I

"am sure I may here include myself in that num-
"ber), and yet, after this fatal act of disobedience,
"she was prevailed on to receive you as her child;
"not, however, nor are you so to understand it,
"as the favourite which you was before. She
"forgave you; but this was as a christian and a
"parent; still preserving in her own mind a just
"sense of your disobedience, and a just resent-
"ment on that account. And yet, notwithstand-
"ing this resentment, she desires you to remem-
"ber, that when you a second time ventured to
"oppose her authority, and nothing would serve
"you but taking a ramble (an indecent one, I
"can't help saying) after your fellow, she thought
"fit to shew the excess of a mother's tenderness,
"and furnished you with no less than fifty pounds
"for your foolish voyage. How can she then be
"otherwise than surprised at your present de-
"mand? which should she be so weak to comply
"with, she must expect to be every month repeat-
"ed, in order to supply the extravagance of a
"young rakish officer.—You say she will com-
"passionate your sufferings; yes, surely she doth
"greatly compassionate them, and so do I too,
"though you was neither so kind, nor so civil as
"to suppose I should. But I forgive all your
"slights to me, as well now as formerly. Nay, I
"not only forgive, but I pray daily for you.—But,
"dear sister, what could you expect less than what
"hath happened? you should have believed your
"friends, who were wiser and older than you. I
"do not here mean myself, though I own I am
"eleven months and some odd weeks your supe-
"rior; though, had I been younger, I might per-
"haps have been able to advise you; for wisdom,
"and what some may call beauty, do not always
"go together. You will not be offended at this;

" for I know in your heart you have always held " your head above some people, whom perhaps " other people have thought better of; but why do I " mention what I scorn so much?—No, my dear sis- " ter, Heaven forbid it should ever be said of me, " that I value myself upon my face—not but if I " could believe men perhaps—but I hate and de- " spise men—you know I do, my dear, and I wish " you had despised them as much; but *jacta est* " *alea*, as the doctor says.——You are to make " the best of your fortune; what fortune I mean " my mamma may please to give you, for you " know all is in her power. Let me advise you " then to bring your mind to your circumstances, " and remember (for I can't help writing it, as it " is for your own good) the vapours are a distemper " which very ill become a knapsack. Remember, " my dear, what you have done, remember what " my mamma hath done, remember we have " something of yours to keep, and do not con- " sider yourself as an only child—No, nor as a " favourite child; but be pleased to remember,

" Dear sister,

" Your most affectionate sister,

" And most obedient humble servant,

" E. HARRIS."

' O brave Miss Betty!' cried Miss Matthews, ' I always held her in high esteem; but I protest ' she exceeds even what I could have expected from ' her.'

' This letter, Madam,' cries Booth, ' you will ' believe was an excellent cordial for my poor ' wife's spirits. So dreadful indeed was the effect ' it had upon her, that as she had read it in my ' absence, I found her at my return home in the ' most violent fits; and so long, was it before she

'recovered her senses, that I despaired of that 'blest event ever happening, and my own senses 'very narrowly escaped from being sacrificed to 'my despair. However, she came at last to her-'self, and I began to consider of every means of 'carrying her immediately to Montpelier, which 'was now become much more necessary than 'before.

'Though I was greatly shocked at the barbarity 'of the letter, yet I apprehended no very ill-con-'sequence from it; for as it was believed all over 'the army that I had married a great fortune, I 'had received offers of money, if I wanted it, from 'more than one. Indeed, I might have easily car-'ried my wife to Montpelier at any time; but she 'was extremely averse to the voyage, being de-'sirous of our returning to England, as I had leave 'to do; and she grew daily so much better, that 'had it not been for the receipt of that cursed— 'which I have just read to you, I am persuaded 'she might have been able to return to England 'in the next ship.

'Among others, there was a colonel in the gar-'rison, who had not only offered but importuned 'me to receive money of him; I now, therefore, 'repaired to him; and as a reason for altering my 'resolution, I produced the letter, and at the same 'time acquainted him with the true state of my 'affairs. The colonel read the letter, shook his 'head, and after some silence, said, he was sorry 'I had refused to accept his offer before; but that 'he had now so ordered matters, and disposed of 'his money, that he had not a shilling left to spare 'from his own occasions.'

'Answers of the same kind I had from several 'others; but not one penny could I borrow of 'any; for I have been since firmly persuaded, that

'the honest colonel was not content with denying 'me himself, but took effectual means, by spreading the secret I had so foolishly trusted him with, 'to prevent me from succeeding elsewhere; for 'such is the nature of men, that whoever denies 'himself to do you a favour, is unwilling that it 'should be done to you by any other.

'This was the first time I had ever felt that 'distress which arises from the want of money; 'a distress very dreadful indeed in a married state; 'for what can be more miserable than to see any 'thing necessary for the preservation of a beloved 'creature, and not to be able to supply it?

'Perhaps you may wonder, Madam, that I have 'not mentioned Captain James on this occasion; 'but he was at that time laid up at Algiers (whither he had been sent by the governor), in a fever. However, he returned time enough to supply 'me, which he did with the utmost readiness, on 'the very first mention of my distress; and the 'good colonel, notwithstanding his having disposed of his money, discounted the captain's 'draft. You see, Madam, an instance, in the 'generous behaviour of my friend James, how 'false are all universal satires against human kind. 'He is indeed one of the worthiest men the world 'ever produced.

'But, perhaps, you will be more pleased still 'with the extravagant generosity of my sergeant. 'The day before the return of Mr. James, the 'poor fellow came to me, with tears in his eyes, 'and begged I would not be offended at what he 'was going to mention. He then pulled a purse 'from his pocket, which contained, he said, the 'sum of twelve pounds, and which he begged me 'to accept, crying, he was sorry it was not in his 'power to lend me whatever I wanted. I was so

'struck with this instance of generosity and friend-
'ship in such a person, that I gave him an oppor-
'tunity of pressing me a second time, before I
'made him an answer. Indeed, I was greatly sur-
'prised how he came to be worth that little sum,
'and no less at his being acquainted with my own
'wants. In both which points he presently satis-
'fied me. As to the first, it seems he had plundered
'a Spanish officer of fifteen pistoles; and as to the
'second, he confessed he had it from my wife's
'maid, who had overheard some discourse be-
'tween her mistress and me. Indeed people, I
'believe, always deceive themselves, who imagine
'they can conceal distrest circumstances from
'their servants; for these are always extremely
'quicksighted on such occasions.'

'Good Heaven!' cries Miss Matthews, 'how
'astonishing is such behaviour in so low a fellow!'

'I thought so myself,' answered Booth; 'and
'yet I know not, on a more strict examination into
'the matter, why we should be more surprised to
'see greatness of mind discover itself in one degree
'or rank of life, than in another. Love, bene-
'volence, or what you will please to call it, may
'be the reigning passion in a beggar as well as in a
'prince; and wherever it is, its energies will be
'the same.

'To confess the truth, I am afraid we often
'compliment what we call upper life, with too
'much injustice, at the expense of the lower. As
'it is no rare thing to see instances which degrade
'human nature in persons of the highest birth
'and education, so I apprehend, that examples of
'whatever is really great and good, have been
'sometimes found amongst those who have wanted
'all such advantages. In reality, palaces, I make
'no doubt, do sometimes contain nothing but

'dreariness and darkness, and the sun of righte'ousness hath shone forth with all its glory in a 'cottage.'

CHAP. VIII.

The Story of Booth continued.

MR. Booth thus went on:

'We now took leave of the garrison, and hav'ing landed at Marseilles, arrived at Montpelier, 'without any thing happening to us worth re'membrance except the extreme sea-sickness of 'poor Amelia; but I was afterwards well repaid 'for the terrors which it occasioned me, by the 'good consequences which attended it; for I be'lieve it contributed even more than the air of 'Montpelier, to the perfect re-establishment of 'her health.'

'I ask your pardon, for interrupting you,' cries Miss Matthews, 'but you never satisfied me whe'ther you took the sergeant's money.——You 'have made me half in love with that charming 'fellow.'

'How can you imagine, Madam, answered Booth, 'I should have taken from a poor fellow 'what was of so little consequence to me, and at 'the same time of so much to him? ——Perhaps, 'now, you will derive this from the passion of 'pride.'

'Indeed,' says she, 'I neither derive it from the 'passion of pride, nor from the passion of folly: 'but methinks you should have accepted the offer, 'and I am convinced you hurt him very much

'when you refused it. But pray proceed in your 'story.' Then Booth went on as follows:

'As Amelia recovered her health and spirits 'daily, we began to pass our time very pleasantly 'at Montpelier; for the greatest enemy to the 'French will acknowledge, that they are the best 'people in the world to live amongst for a little 'while. In some countries it is almost as easy to 'get a good estate as a good acquaintance. In 'England, particularly, acquaintance is of almost 'as slow growth as an oak: so that the age of man 'scarce suffices to bring it to any perfection, and 'families seldom contract any great intimacy till 'the third, or at least the second generation. So 'shy indeed are we English of letting a stranger 'into our houses, that one would imagine we re-'garded all such as thieves. Now the French are 'the very reverse. Being a stranger among them 'entitles you to the better place, and to the greater 'degree of civility; and if you wear but the ap-'pearance of a gentleman, they never suspect you 'are not one. Their friendship indeed seldom ex-'tends so far as their purse; nor is such friendship 'usual in other countries. To say the truth, po-'liteness carries friendship far enough in the ordi-'nary occasions of life, and those who want this 'accomplishment, rarely make amends for it by 'their sincerity; for bluntness, or rather rude-'ness, as it commonly deserves to be called, is 'not always so much a mark of honesty as it is 'taken to be.

'The day after our arrival we became acquainted 'with Mons. Bagillard. He was a Frenchman of 'great wit and vivacity, with a greater share of 'learning than gentlemen are usually possessed of. 'As he lodged in the same house with us, we were 'immediately acquainted, and I liked his conver-

'sation so well, that I never thought I had too 'much of his company. Indeed, I spent so much 'of my time with him, that Amelia (I know not 'whether I ought to mention it) grew uneasy at 'our familiarity, and complained of my being too 'little with her, from my violent fondness for my 'new acquaintance; for our conversation turning 'chiefly upon books, and principally Latin ones '(for we read several of the classics together), she 'could have but little entertainment by being 'with us. When my wife had once taken it into 'her head that she was deprived of my company by 'M. Bagillard, it was impossible to change her 'opinion; and though I now spent more of my 'time with her than I had ever done before, she 'still grew more and more dissatisfied, till, at last, 'she very earnestly desired me to quit my lodg-'ings, and insisted upon it with more vehemence 'than I had ever known her express before. To 'say the truth, if that excellent woman could ever 'be thought unreasonable, I thought she was so on 'this occasion.

'But in what light soever her desires appeared 'to me, as they manifestly arose from an affection 'of which I had daily the most endearing proofs, 'I resolved to comply with her, and accordingly 'removed to a distant part of the town; for it is 'my opinion, that we can have but little love for 'the person whom we will never indulge in an un-'reasonable demand. Indeed, I was under a dif-'ficulty with regard to Mons. Bagillard; for as I 'could not possibly communicate to him the true 'reason for quitting my lodgings; so I found it as 'difficult to deceive him by a counterfeit one; be-'sides, I was apprehensive I should have little less 'of his company than before. I could, indeed, 'have avoided this dilemma by quitting Mont-

'pelier: for Amelia had perfectly ed her
'health; but I had faithfully prom a Captain
'James to wait his return from Italy, whither he
'was gone some time before from Gibraltar; nor
'was it proper for Amelia to take any long jour-
'ney, she being now near six months gone with
'child.

'This difficulty, however, proved to be less than
'I had imagined it; for my French friend, whe-
'ther he suspected any thing from my wife's be-
'haviour, though she never, as I observed, shewed
'him the least incivility, became suddenly as cold
'on his side. After our leaving the lodgings, he
'never made above two or three formal visits; in-
'deed, his time was soon after entirely taken up
'by an intrigue with a certain countess, which
'blazed all over Montpelier.

'We had not been long in our new apartments
'before an English officer arrived at Montpelier,
'and came to lodge in the same house with us.
'This gentleman, whose name was Bath, was of
'the rank of a major, and had so much singula-
'rity in his character, that, perhaps, you never
'heard of any like him. He was far from having
'any of those bookish qualifications, which had
'before caused my Amelia's disquiet. It is true,
'his discourse generally turned on matters of no
'feminine kind; war and martial exploits being
'the ordinary topics of his conversation; how-
'ever, as he had a sister with whom Amelia was
'greatly pleased, an intimacy presently grew be-
'tween us, and we four lived in one family.

'The major was a great dealer in the marvel-
'lous, and was constantly the little hero of his
'own tale. This made him very entertaining to
'Amelia, who, of all persons in the world, hath
'the truest taste and enjoyment of the ridiculous;

'for whilst no one sooner discovers it in the cha-
'racter of an other, no one so well conceals her
'knowledge of it from the ridiculous person. I
'cannot help mentioning a sentiment of hers on
'this head, as I think it doth her great honour.
"If I had the same neglect," said she, "for ri-
"diculous people with the generality of the world,
"I should rather think them the objects of tears
"than laughter; but, in reality, I have known
"several who, in some parts of their characters,
"have been extremely ridiculous, in others have
"been alogether as amiable. For instance," said
"she, "Here is the major, who tells us of many
"things which he has never seen, and of others
"which he hath never done, and both in the most
"extravagant excess; and yet how amiable is his
"behaviour to his poor sister, whom he hath not
"only brought over hither for her health, at his
"own expense, but is come to bear her com-
"pany." I believe, Madam, I repeat her very
'words; for I am very apt to remember what she
'says.

'You will easily believe, from a circumstance
'I have just mentioned in the major's favour, es-
'pecially when I have told you that his sister was
'one of the best of girls, that it was entirely ne-
'cessary to hide from her all kind of laughter at
'any part of her brother's behaviour. To say
'the truth, this was easy enough to do; for the
'poor girl was so blinded with love and gratitude,
'and so highly honoured and reverenced her bro-
'ther, that she had not the least suspicion that
'there was a person in the world capable of
'laughing at him.

'Indeed I am certain she never made the least
'discovery of our ridicule; for I am well con-
'vinced she would have resented it; for, besides
'the love she bore her brother, she had a little

'family pride, which would sometimes appear. 'To say the truth, if she had any fault, it was 'that of vanity: but she was a very good girl 'upon the whole; and none of us are entirely 'free from faults.'

'You are a good-natured fellow, Will,' answer- 'ed Miss Matthews; 'but vanity is a fault of the 'first magnitude in a woman, and often the occa- 'sion of many others.'

To this Booth made no answer; but continued his story.

'In this company we passed two or three months 'very agreeably, till the major and I both betook 'ourselves to our several nurseries; my wife being 'brought to bed of a girl, and Miss Bath confined 'to her chamber by a surfeit, which had like to 'have occasioned her death.

Here Miss Matthews burst into a loud laugh, of which, when Booth asked the reason, she said, she 'could not forbear at the thoughts of two such 'nurses: 'And did you really,' says she, 'make 'your wife's caudle yourself?'

'Indeed, Madam, said he, 'I did; and do you 'think that so extraordinary?'

'Indeed I do,' answered she; 'I thought the 'best husbands had looked on their wives lying-in 'as a time of festival and jollity. What! did you 'not even get drunk in the time of your wife's 'delivery? tell me honestly how you enployed 'yourself at this time.'

'Why, then, honestly,' replied he, 'and in de- 'fiance of your laughter, I lay behind the bolster, 'and supported her in my arms; and upon my 'soul, I believe I felt more pain in my mind than 'she underwent in her body. And now answer me 'as honestly; Do you really think it a proper 'time of mirth, when the creature one loves to

'distraction is undergoing the most racking tor-'ments, as well as in the most imminent danger?'and——but I need not express any more tender'circumstances.'

'I am to answer honestly,' cried she——'Yes,'and sincerely,' cries Booth—'Why, then, ho-'nestly and sincerely,' says she, 'may I never'see Heaven, if I don't think you an angel of a'man.'

'Nay, Madam,' answered Booth,—'but, in-'deed, you do me too much honour, there are'many such husbands—Nay, have we not an ex-'ample of the like tenderness in the major? though'as to him, I believe, I shall make you laugh.'While my wife lay in, Miss Bath being extremely'ill, I went one day to the door of her apartment,'to inquire after her health, as well as for the'major, whom I had not seen during a whole'week. I knocked softly at the door, and being'bid to open it, I found the major in his sister's'antichamber warming her posset. His dress was'certainly whimsical enough, having on a wo-'man's bedgown, and a very dirty flannel night-'cap, which being added to a very odd person'(for he is a very awkard thin man, near seven'feet high), might have formed, in the opinion of'most men, a very proper object of laughter. The'major starting from his seat at my entering into'the room, and with much emotion, and a great'oath, cried out, "Is it you, Sir?" I then in-'quired after his and his sister's health. He an-'swered, That his sister was better, and he was'very well, "though I did not expect, Sir," cried'he, with not a little confusion, "to be seen by"you in this situation." I told him, I thought'it impossible he could appear in a situation more'becoming his character. "You do not?" an-

"swered he. "By G— I am very much obliged "to you for that opinion; but, I believe, Sir, "however my weakness may prevail on me to "descend from it, no man can be more con-"scious of his own dignity than myself." His 'sister then called to him from the inner room; 'upon which he rang the bell for her servant, and 'then after a stride or two across the room, he 'said, with an elated aspect, "I would not have "you think, Mr. Booth, because you have caught "me in this dishabille, by coming upon me a little "too abruptly, I cannot help saying a little too "abruptly, that I am my sister's nurse. I know "better what is due to the dignity of a man, and "I have shewn it in a line of battle.——I think "I have made a figure there, Mr. Booth, and be-"coming my character; by G— I ought not to "be despised too much, if my nature is not totally "without its weaknesses." He uttered this, and 'some more of the same kind, with great majesty, 'or, as he called it, dignity. Indeed, he used some 'hard words that I did not understand; for all 'his words are not to be found in a dictionary. 'Upon the whole, I could not easily refrain from 'laughter; however, I conquered myself, and soon 'after retired from him, astonished that it was 'possible for a man to possess true goodness, and 'be, at the same time, ashamed of it.

'But if I was surprised at what had past at this 'visit, how much more was I surprised the next 'morning, when he came very early to my cham-'ber, and told me he had not been able to sleep 'one wink at what had past between us! "There "were some words of yours," says he, "which "must be further explained before we part. You "told me, Sir, when you found me in that situa-"tion, which I cannot bear to recollect, that you

" thought I could not appear in one more becom-
" ing my character; these were the words, I shall
" never forget them. Do you imagine that there
" is any of the dignity of a man wanting in my
" character? do you think that I have, during my
" sister's illness, behaved with a weakness that sa-
" vours too much of effeminacy? I know how
" much it is beneath a man to whine and whimper
" about a trifling girl as well as you, or any man;
" and if my sister had died, I should have behaved
" like a man on the occasion. I would not have
" you think I confined myself from company
" merely upon her account. I was very much
" disordered myself. And when you surprised
" me in that situation, I repeat again, in that si-
" tuation, her nurse had not left the room three
" minutes, and I was blowing the fire for fear it
" should have gone out."—In this manner he ran
' on almost a quarter of an hour, before he would
' suffer me to speak. At last, looking stedfastly
' in his face, I asked him, if I must conclude that
' he was in earnest?——" In earnest," says he, re-
' peating my words, " Do you then take my cha-
' racter for a jest?"—Lookee, Sir, said I, very
' gravely, I think we know one another very well;
' and I have no reason to suspect you should im-
' pute it to fear, when I tell you, I was so far from
' intending to affront you, that I meant you one
' of the highest compliments. Tenderness for wo-
' men is so far from lessening, that it proves a true
' manly character. The manly Brutus shewed the
' utmost tenderness to his Portia; and the great
' king of Sweden, the bravest, and even fiercest of
' men, shut himself up three whole days in the
' midst of a campaign, and would see no company
' on the death of a favourite sister. At these
' words, I saw his features soften; and he cried

' out, " D—n me, I admire the king of Sweden " of all the men in the world; and he is a rascal " that is ashamed of doing any thing which the " king of Sweden did.—And yet if any king of " Sweden in France was to tell me that his sister " had more merit than mine, by G— I'd knock " his brains about his ears. Poor little Betsey! " she is the honestest, worthiest girl that ever was " born. Heaven be praised, she is recovered; for " if I had lost her, I never should have enjoyed " another happy moment." In this manner he ran ' on some time, till the tears began to overflow ' ——which, when he perceived, he stopt; per- ' haps he was unable to go on; for he seemed ' almost choaked;—after a short silence, however, ' having wiped his eyes with his handkerchief, he ' fetched a deep sigh, and cried, " I am ashamed " you should see this, Mr. Booth; but d—n me, " nature will get the better of dignity." I now ' comforted him with the example of Xerxes, as ' I had before done with that of the king of ' Sweden; and soon after we sat down to break- ' fast together with much cordial friendship; for ' I assure you, with all his oddity, there is not a ' better-natured man in the world than the major.'

' Good-natured, indeed!' cries Miss Matthews, with great scorn.—' A fool! how can you mention ' such a fellow with commendation?'

Booth spoke as much as he could in defence of his friend; indeed, he had represented him in as favourable a light as possible, and had particularly left out those hard words, with which, as he hath observed a little before, the major interlarded his discourse. Booth then proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. IX.

Containing very extraordinary Matters.

'MISS Bath,' continued Booth, 'now reco-
'vered so fast, that she was abroad as soon as
'my wife. Our little partie quarrée began to
'grow agreeable again; and we mixed with the
'company of the place more than we had done
'before. Mons. Bagillard now again renewed his
'intimacy, for the countess, his mistress, was gone
'to Paris; at which my wife, at first, shewed no
'dissatisfaction; and I imagined, that, as she had
'a friend and companion of her own sex (for Miss
'Bath and she had contracted the highest fond-
'ness for each other) that she would the less miss
'my company. However, I was disappointed in
'this expectation; for she soon began to express
'her former uneasiness, and her impatience for
'the arrival of Captain James, that we might en-
'tirely quit Montpelier.

'I could not avoid conceiving some little dis-
'pleasure at this humour of my wife, which I was
'forced to think a little unreasonable.—" A little,
" do you call it," says Miss Matthews, " Good
" Heavens! what a husband are you!"—How
'little worthy,' answered he, 'as you will say
'hereafter, of such a wife as my Amelia. One
'day as we were sitting together, I heard a violent
'scream; upon which my wife, starting up, cried
'out, " Sure that's Miss Bath's voice," and imme-
'diately ran towards the chamber whence it pro-
ceeded. I followed her; and when we arrived,
we there beheld the most shocking sight imagi-
'nable; Miss Bath lying dead on the floor, and

'the major all bloody kneeling by her, and roar- 'ing out for assistance. Amelia, though she was 'herself in little better condition than her friend, 'ran hastily to her, bared her neck, and attempted 'to loosen her stays, while I ran up and down, 'scarce knowing what I did, calling for water and 'cordials, and dispatching several servants one 'after another for doctors and surgeons.

'Water, cordials, and all necessary implements 'being brought, Miss Bath was, at length, reco- 'vered, and placed in her chair, when the major 'seated himself by her. And now the young lady 'being restored to life, the major, who, till then, 'had engaged as little of his own, as of any other 'person's attention, became the object of all our 'considerations, especially his poor sister's, who 'had no sooner recovered sufficient strength, than 'she began to lament her brother, crying out, 'that he was killed; and bitterly bewailing her 'fate, in having revived from her swoon to behold 'so dreadful a spectacle. While Amelia applied 'herself to soothe the agonies of her friend, I be- 'gan to inquire into the condition of the major. 'In which I was assisted by a surgeon, who now 'arrived.—The major declared with great cheer- 'fulness, that he did not apprehend his wound to 'be in the least dangerous, and therefore begged 'his sister to be comforted, saying, he was con- 'vinced the surgeon would soon give her the same 'assurance; but that good man was not so liberal 'of assurances as the major had expected; for as 'soon as he had probed the wound, he afforded 'no more than hopes, declaring that it was a very 'ugly wound; but added, by way of consolation, 'that he had cured many much worse.

'When the major was drest, his sister seemed 'to possess his whole thoughts, and all his care

'was to relieve her grief. He solemnly protested, 'that it was no more than a flesh wound, and not 'very deep, nor could, as he apprehended, be in 'the least dangerous; and as for the cold expres- 'sions of the surgeon, he very well accounted for 'them from a motive too obvious to be mentioned. '—From these declarations of her brother, and 'the interposition of her friends, and, above all, 'I believe, from that vast vent which she had 'given to her fright, Miss Bath seemed a little 'pacified: Amelia, therefore, at last prevailed; 'and as terror abated, curiosity became the supe- 'rior passion. I therefore now began to inquire 'what had occasioned that accident whence all 'the uproar arose.

'The major took me by the hand, and looking 'very kindly at me, said, "My dear Mr. Booth, "I must begin by asking your pardon; for I have "done you an injury, for which nothing but the "height of friendship in me can be an excuse; "and therefore nothing but the height of friend- "ship in you can forgive." This preamble, Ma- 'dam, you will easily believe, greatly alarmed all 'the company, but especially me.——I answered, 'dear major, I forgive you, let it be what it will; 'but what is it possible you can have done to in- 'jure me? "That," replied he, "which I am con- "vinced a man of your honour and dignity of "nature, by G—— must conclude to be one of "the highest injuries. I have taken out of your "own hands the doing yourself justice. I am "afraid I have killed the man who hath injured "your honour. I mean that villain Bagillard— "but I cannot proceed; for you, Madam," said 'he to my wife, "are concerned; and I know "what is due to the dignity of your sex."—Ame- 'lia, I observed, turned pale at these words, but

'eagerly begged him to proceed—" Nay, Ma-
" dam," answered he, " if I am commanded by a
" lady, it is a part of my dignity to obey." He
'then proceeded to tell us, that Bagillard had
'rallied him upon a supposition that he was pur-
'suing my wife with a view of gallantry; telling
'him, that he could never succeed; giving hints
'that if it had been possible, he should have suc-
'ceeded himself; and ending with calling my
'poor Amelia an accomplished prude; upon which
'the major gave Bagillard a box on the ear, and
'both immediately drew their swords.

'The major had scarce ended his speech, when
'a servant came into the room, and told me there
'was a friar below, who desired to speak with me
'in great haste. I shook the major by the hand,
'and told him I not only forgave him, but was
'extremely obliged to his friendship; and then
'going to the friar, I found that he was Bagil-
'gard's confessor, from whom he came to me, with
'an earnest desire of seeing me, that he might ask
'my pardon, and receive my forgiveness before
'he died, for the injury he had intended me. My
'wife at first opposed my going, from some sud-
'den fears on my account; but when she was
'convinced they were groundless, she consented.

'I found Bagillard in his bed; for the major's
'sword had passed up to the very hilt through his
'body. After having very earnestly asked my
'pardon, he made me many compliments on the
'possession of a woman, who, joined to the most
'exquisite beauty, was mistress of the most im-
'pregnable virtue; as a proof of which, he ac-
'knowledged the vehemence as well as ill success
'of his attempts; and to make Amelia's virtue
'appear the brighter, his vanity was so predomi-
'nant, he could not forbear running over the

'names of several women of fashion who had 'yielded to his passion, which, he said, had never 'raged so violently for any other as for my poor 'Amelia; and that this violence, which he had 'found wholly unconquerable, he hoped would 'procure his pardon at my hands. It is unne-'cessary to mention what I said on the occasion. 'I assured him of my entire forgiveness; and so 'we parted. To say the truth, I afterwards 'thought myself almost obliged to him for a meet-'ing with Amelia, the most luxuriously delicate 'that can be imagined.

'I now ran to my wife, whom I embraced with 'raptures of love and tenderness. When the first 'torrent of these was a little abated. "Confess "to me, my dear," said she, "could your good-"ness prevent you from thinking me a little un-"reasonable in expressing so much uneasiness at "the loss of your company, while I ought to have "rejoiced in the thoughts of your being so well "entertained? I know you must; and then con-"sider what I must have felt, while I knew I was "daily lessening myself in your esteem, and "forced into a conduct, which I was sensible must "appear to you, who was ignorant of my motive, "to be mean, vulgar, and selfish. And yet, what "other course had I to take, with a man whom no "denial, no scorn could abash?—But if this was a "cruel task, how much more wretched still was "the constraint I was obliged to wear in his pre-"sence before you, to shew outward civility to the "man whom my soul detested, for fear of any "fatal consequence from your suspicion; and this "too, while I was afraid he would construe it to "be an encouragement?—Do you not pity your "poor Amelia, when you reflect on her situation?" "—Pity!' cried I, 'my love! is pity an adequate

'pression for esteem, for adoration?—But how 'my love, could he carry this on so secretly—by "letters?' "O no, he offered me many; but I "never would receive but one, and that I returned "him. Good G— I would not have such a letter "in my possession for the universe, I thought my "eyes contaminated with reading it."—'O brave;' cried Miss Matthews, 'heroic, I protest.

'Had I a wish that did not bear
'The stamp and image of my dear,
'I'd pierce my heart through ev'ry vein,
'And die to let it out again.'

'And can you really,' cried he, 'laugh at so 'much tenderness?' 'I laugh at tenderness! O 'Mr. Booth!' answered she, 'Thou knowest but 'little of Calista.' 'I thought formerly,' cried he, 'I knew a great deal, and thought you, of all wo-'men in the world, to have the greatest——of all 'women!'—'Take care, Mr. Booth,' said she—— 'By Heaven! if you thought so, you thought 'truly. But what is the object of my tenderness '—such an object as———' 'Well, Madam,' says he, 'I hope you will find one.'——'I thank you 'for that hope, however,' says she, 'cold as it is. 'But pray go on with your story;' which command he immediately obeyed.

CHAP. X.

Containing a Letter of a very curious Kind.

'THE major's wound,' continued Booth, 'was
'really as slight as he believed it; so that in a very
'few days he was perfectly well; nor was Bagil-
'lard, though run through the body, long appre-
'hended to be in any danger of his life. The
'major then took me aside, and wishing me heartily
'joy of Bagillard's recovery, told me, I should
'now, by the gift (as it were) of Heaven, have
'an opportunity of doing myself justice. I an-
'swered, I could not think of any such thing: for
'that when I imagined he was on his death-bed,
'I had heartily and sincerely forgiven him. "Very
"right," replied the major, "and consistent with
"your honour, when he was on his death-bed;
"but that forgiveness was only conditional, and
"is revoked by his recovery." I told him, I could
'not possibly revoke it; for that my anger was
'really gone.—"What hath anger," cried he, "to
"do with the matter! the dignity of my nature
"hath been always my reason for drawing my
"sword; and when that is concerned, I can as
"readily fight with the man I love, as with the
"man I hate."—I will not tire you with the repe-
'tition of the whole argument, in which the ma-
'jor did not prevail; and I really believe, I sunk
'a little in his esteem upon that account, till Cap-
'tain James, who arrived soon after, again per-
'fectly reinstated me in his favour.

'When the captain was come, there remained
'no cause of our longer stay at Montpelier; for
'as to my wife, she was in a better state of health

'than I had ever known her; and Miss Bath had 'not only recovered her health, but her bloom, 'and from a pale skeleton was become a plump, 'handsome, young woman. James was again my 'cashier; for, far from receiving any remittance, 'it was now a long time since I had received any 'letter from England, though both myself and my 'dear Amelia had written several, both to my mo-'ther and sister; and now, at our departure from 'Montpelier, I bethought myself of writing to my 'good friend the doctor, acquainting him with our 'journey to Paris, whither I desired he would direct 'his answer.

'At Paris we all arrived, without encountering 'any adventure on the road worth relating; nor 'did any thing of consequence happen here during 'the first fortnight; for as you know neither Cap-'tain James nor Miss Bath, it is scarce worth tell-'ing you, that an affection, which afterwards ended 'in a marriage, began now to appear between them, 'in which it may appear odd to you that I made 'the first discovery of the lady's flame, and my 'wife of the captain's.

'The seventeenth day after our arrival at Paris, 'I received a letter from the doctor, which I have 'in my pocket-book; and, if you please, I will read 'it you; for I would not willingly do any injury 'to his words.'

The lady, you may easily believe, desired to hear the letter, and Booth read it as follows:

"MY DEAR CHILDREN,

"For I will now call you so, as you have nei-"ther of you now any other parent in this world. "Of this melancholy news I should have sent you "earlier notice, if I had thought you ignorant of "it, or indeed if I had known whither to have

" written. If your sister hath received any letters " from you, she hath kept them a secret, and per- " haps out of affection to you hath reposited them " in the same place where she keeps her goodness, " and, what I am afraid is much dearer to her, her " money. The reports concerning you, have been " various; so is always the case in matters where " men are ignorant; for when no man knows what " the truth is, every man thinks himself at liberty " to report what he pleases. Those who wish you " well, son Booth, say simply that you are dead; " others, that you ran away from the siege, and " was cashiered. As for my daughter, all agree " that she is a saint above; and there are not want- " ing those who hint that her husband sent her thi- " ther. From this beginning you will expect, I " suppose, better news than I am going to tell you; " but pray, my dear children, why may not I, who " have always laughed at my own afflictions, laugh " at yours, without the censure of much malevo- " lence? I wish you could learn this temper from " me; for, take my word for it, nothing truer ever " came from the mouth of a heathen than that sen- " tence,

" ——*Leve fit quod bene fertur onus.**

" And though I must confess, I never thought " Aristotle (whom I do not take for so great a " blockhead as some who have never read him) " doth not very well resolve the doubt which he " hath raised in his Ethics, viz. How a man, in the " midst of King Priam's misfortunes, can be called " happy? yet I have long thought that there is no " calamity so great, that a Christian philosopher

* The burthen becomes light by being well borne.

" may not reasonably laugh at it. If the heathen " Cicero, doubting of immortality (for so wise a " man must have doubted of that which had such " slender arguments to support it) could assert it as " the office of wisdom, *Humanas res despicere atque* " *infra se positas arbitrari*.†

" Which passage, with much more to the same " purpose, you will find in the third book of his " Tusculan Questions.

" With how much greater confidence may a " good Christian despise, and even deride, all tem- " porary and short transitory evils? if the poor " wretch, who is trudging on to his miserable cot- " tage, can laugh at the storms and tempests, the " rain and whirlwinds which surround him, while " his richest hope is only that of rest; how much " more cheerfully must a man pass through such " transient evils, whose spirits are buoyed up with " the certain expectation of finding a noble palace, " and the most sumptuous entertainment ready to " receive him? I do not much like the simile; but " I cannot think of a better. And yet, inadequate " as the simile is, we may, I think, from the actions " of mankind, conclude, that they will consider it " as much too strong; for in the case I have put " of the entertainment, is there any man so tender " or poor spirited as not to despise, and often to " deride, the fiercest of those inclemencies which " I have mentioned; but in our journey to the " glorious mansions of everlasting bliss, how se- " verely is every little rub, every trifling accident " lamented; and if fortune showers down any of " her heavier storms upon us, how wretched do " we presently appear to ourselves and to others!

* To look down on all human affairs as matters below his consideration.

"The reason of this can be no other than that we "are not in earnest in our faith; at the best we "think, with too little attention, on this our great "concern. While the most paltry matters of this "world, even those pitiful trifles, those childish "gewgaws, riches, and honours, are transacted "with the utmost earnestness, and most serious "application, the grand and weighty affair of im-"mortality is postponed and disregarded, nor ever "brought into the least competition with our af-"fairs here. If one of my cloth should begin a "discourse of Heaven in the scenes of business or "pleasure; in the Court of Requests, at Garra-"way's, or at White's, would he gain a hearing, "unless, perhaps, of some sorry jester who would "desire to ridicule him? would he not presently "acquire the name of the mad parson, and be "thought by all men worthy of Bedlam? or would "he not be treated as the Romans treated their "Aretalogi,* and considered in the light of a buf-"foon? But why should I mention those places of "hurry and worldly pursuit?—What attention do "we engage even in the pulpit? here, if a sermon "be prolonged a little beyond the usual hour, doth "it not set half the audience asleep; as I question "not I have by this time both my children.—Well "then, like a good-natured surgeon, who prepares "his patient for a painful operation, by endeavour-"ing as much as he can to deaden his sensation, I "will now communicate to you, in your slumber-"ing condition the news with which I threatened "you. Your good mother, you are to know, is "dead at last, and hath left her whole fortune to "her elder daughter.—This is all the ill news I

* A set of beggarly philosophers, who diverted great men at their table with burlesque discourses on virtue.

"have to tell you. Confess now, if you are awake, "did you not expect it was much worse; did not "you apprehend that your charming child was "dead? far from it, he is in perfect health, and "the admiration of every body; what is more, he "will be taken care of, with the tenderness of a "parent, till your return. What pleasure must "this give you! if indeed any thing can add to the "happiness of a married couple, who are extremely "and deservedly fond of each other, and, as you "write me, in perfect health. A superstitious hea- "then would have dreaded the malice of Neme- "sis, in your situation; but as I am a Christian, I "shall venture to add another circumstance to your "felicity, by assuring you that you have, besides "your wife, a faithful and zealous friend.—Do not "therefore, my dear children, fall into that fault "which, the excellent Thucydides observes, is too "common in human nature, to bear heavily the "being deprived of the smaller good, without con- "ceiving, at the same time, any gratitude for the "much greater blessings which we are suffered to "enjoy. I have only farther to tell you, my son, "that when you call at Mr. Morand's, Rue Dau- "phine, you will find yourself worth a hundred "pounds. Good Heaven! how much richer are "you than millions of people who are in want of "nothing! farewel, and know me for

"Your sincere and affectionate friend."

'There, Madam,' cries Booth, 'how do you 'like the letter?'

'Oh! extremely,' answered she, 'the doctor is 'a charming man; I always loved dearly to hear 'him preach. I remember to have heard of Mrs. 'Harris's death above a year before I left the coun- 'try; but never knew the particulars of her will

'before. I am extremely sorry for it, upon my 'honour.'

'Oh fy! Madam,' cries Booth, 'have you so 'soon forgot the chief purport of the doctor's 'letter?'

'Ay, ay,' cried she, 'these are very pretty things 'to read, I acknowledge; but the loss of fortune 'is a serious matter; and I am sure a man of Mr. 'Booth's understanding must think so.' 'One 'consideration, I must own, Madam,' answered he, 'a good deal baffled all the doctor's arguments. 'This was my concern for my little growing fa-'mily, who must one day feel the loss; nor was I 'so easy upon Amelia's account as upon my own, 'though she herself put on the utmost cheerful-'ness, and stretched her invention to the utmost to 'comfort me.—But sure, Madam, there is some-'thing in the doctor's letter to admire beyond the 'philosophy of it; what think you of that easy, 'generous, friendly manner, in which he sent me 'the hundred pounds?'

'Very noble and great indeed,' replied she. 'But pray go on with your story; for I long to 'hear the whole.'

CHAP. XI.

In which Mr. Booth relates his Return to England.

'NOTHING remarkable, as I remember, hap-'pened during our stay at Paris, which we left 'soon after, and came to London. Here we 'rested only two days, and then, taking leave of 'our fellow-travellers, we set out for Wiltshire,

'my wife being so impatient to see the child which 'she had left behind her, that the child she carried 'with her was almost killed with the fatigue of the 'journey.

'We arrived at our inn late in the evening. 'Amelia, though she had no great reason to be 'pleased with any part of her sister's behaviour, 'resolved to behave to her as if nothing wrong had 'ever happened. She, therefore, sent a kind note 'to her the moment of our arrival, giving her her 'option, whether she would come to us at the inn, 'or whether we should that evening wait on her. 'The servant, after waiting an hour, brought us 'an answer, excusing her from coming to us so 'late, as she was disordered with a cold, and desir-'ing my wife by no means to think of venturing 'out after the fatigue of her journey; saying, she 'would, on that account, defer the great pleasure 'of seeing her till the morning, without taking any 'more notice of your humble servant, than if no 'such person had been in the world, though I had 'very civilly sent my compliments to her. I should 'not mention this trifle, if it was not to shew you 'the nature of the woman, and that it will be a 'kind of key to her future conduct.

'When the servant returned, the good doctor, 'who had been with us almost all the time of his 'absence, hurried us away to his house where we 'presently found a supper and a bed prepared for 'us. My wife was eagerly desirous to see her child 'that night; but the doctor would not suffer it; 'and as he was at nurse at a distant part of the 'town, and the doctor assured her he had seen him 'in perfect health that evening, she suffered her-'self at last to be dissuaded.

'We spent that evening in the most agreeable 'manner; for the doctor's wit and humour, joined

'to the highest cheerfulness and good-nature, made 'him the most agreeable companion in the world; 'and he was now in the highest spirits, which he 'was pleased to place to our account. We sat together to a very late hour; for so excellent is my 'wife's constitution, that she declared she was 'scarce sensible of any fatigue from her late 'journies.

'Amelia slept not a wink all night, and in the 'morning early the doctor accompanied us to the 'little infant. The transports we felt on this occasion were really enchanting, nor can any but a 'fond parent conceive, I am certain, the least idea 'of them. Our imaginations suggested a hundred 'agreeable circumstances, none of which had, perhaps, any foundation. We made words and meaning out of every sound, and in every feature found 'out some resemblance to my Amelia, as she did 'to me.

'But I ask your pardon for dwelling on such incidents; and will proceed to scenes, which, to 'most persons, will be more entertaining.

'We went hence to pay a visit to Miss Harris, 'whose reception of us was, I think, truly ridiculous; and as you know the lady, I will endeavour to describe it particularly. At our first arrival we were ushered into a parlour, where we 'were suffered to wait almost an hour. At length 'the lady of the house appeared in deep mourning, 'with a face, if possible, more dismal than her 'dress, in which, however, there was every appearance of art. Her features were indeed screwed 'up to the very height of grief. With this face, 'and in the most solemn gait, she approached Amelia, and coldly saluted her. After which, she 'made me a very distant formal courtesy, and we 'all sat down. A short silence now ensued, which

'Miss Harris at length broke, with a deep sigh, 'and said, "'Sister, here is a great alteration in "this place since you saw it last; Heaven hath "been pleased to take my poor mother to itself." '—(Here she wiped her eyes, and then continued) "I hope I know my duty, and have learned a pro- "per resignation to the divine will; but something "is to be allowed to grief for the best of mothers; "for so she was to us both; and if at last she made "any distinction, she must have had her reasons "for so doing. I am sure I can truly say I never "wished, much less desired it." The tears now 'stood in poor Amelia's eyes; indeed, she had 'paid too many already for the memory of so un- 'natural a parent. She answered with the sweet- 'ness of an angel, that she was far from blaming 'her sister's emotions on so tender an occasion; 'that she heartily joined with her in her grief; for 'that nothing which her mother had done in the 'latter part of her life could efface the remembrance 'of that tenderness which she had formerly shewn 'her. Her sister caught hold of the word efface, 'and rung the changes upon it.—"Efface!" cried 'she, "O Miss Emily (for you must not expect "me to repeat names that will be for ever odious), "I wish indeed every thing could be effaced.— "Effaced! O that that was possible! we might "then have still enjoyed my poor mother; for I "am convinced she never recovered her grief on a "certain occasion."——Thus she ran on, and after 'many bitter strokes upon her sister, at last directly 'charged her mother's death on my marriage with 'Amelia. I could be silent then no longer. I re- 'minded her of the perfect reconciliation between 'us before my departure, and the great fondness 'which she expressed for me; nor could I help 'saying in very plain terms, that if she had ever

'changed her opinion of me, as I was not conscious 'of having deserved such a change by my own be-'haviour, I was well convinced to whose good 'offices I owed it. Guilt hath very quick ears to 'an accusation. Miss Harris immediately answer-'ed to the charge. She said, such suspicions were 'no more than she expected; that they were of a 'piece with every other part of my conduct, and 'gave her one consolation, that they served to ac-'count for her sister Emily's unkindness, as well 'to herself as to her poor deceased mother, and in 'some measure lessened the guilt of it with regard 'to her, since it was not easy to know how far a 'woman is in the power of her husband. My dear 'Amelia reddened at this reflection on me; and 'begged her sister to name any single instance of 'unkindness or disrespect, in which she had ever 'offended. To this the other answered, (I am sure 'I repeat her words, though I cannot mimic either 'the voice or air with which they were spoken)— "Pray, Miss Emily, which is to be the judge, "yourself or that gentleman? I remember the time "when I could have trusted to your judgment in "any affair; but you are now no longer mistress "of yourself, and are not answerable for your ac-"tions. Indeed, it is my constant prayer that your "actions may not be imputed to you.—It was the "constant prayer of that blessed woman, my dear "mother, who is now a saint above; a saint whose "name I can never mention without a tear, though "I find you can hear it without one.—I cannot "help observing some concern on so melancholy "an occasion; it seems due to decency; but per-"haps (for I always wish to excuse you) you are "forbid to cry." The idea of being bid or forbid 'to cry, struck so strongly on my fancy, that in-'dignation only could have prevented me from

'laughing. But my narrative, I am afraid, begins 'to grow tedious.—In short, after hearing, for near 'an hour, every malicious insinuation which a fertile 'genius could invent, we took our leave, and sepa- 'rated as persons who would never willingly meet 'again.

'The next morning, after this interview, Ame- 'lia received a long letter from Miss Harris; in 'which, after many bitter invectives against me, 'she excused her mother, alleging that she had 'been driven to do as she did, in order to prevent 'Amelia's ruin, if her fortune had fallen into my 'hands. She likewise very remotely hinted that 'she would be only a trustee for her sister's chil- 'dren, and told her, that on one condition only, 'she would consent to live with her as a sister. 'This was, if she could by any means be sepa- 'rated from that man, as she was pleased to call 'me, who had caused so much mischief in the 'family.

'I was so enraged at this usage, that, had not 'Amelia intervened, I believe I should have applied 'to a magistrate for a search-warrant for that pic- 'ture, which there was so much reason to suspect 'she had stolen; and which, I am convinced, 'upon a search, we should have found in her pos- 'session.'

'Nay, it is possible enough,' cries Miss Mat- thews; 'for I believe there is no wickedness of 'which the lady is not capable.'

'This agreeable letter was succeeded by another 'of the like comfortable kind, which informed 'me that the company in which I was, being an 'additional one raised in the beginning of the war, 'was reduced; so that I was now a lieutenant on 'half-pay.

'Whilst we were meditating on our present situ-

'ation, the good doctor came to us. When we re-'lated to him the manner in which my sister had 'treated us, he cried out, "Poor soul! I pity her "heartily;" for this is the severest resentment he 'ever expresses; indeed, I have often heard him 'say, that a wicked soul is the greatest object of 'compassion in the world.'—A sentiment which we shall leave the reader a little time to digest.

CHAP. XII.

In which Mr. Booth concludes his Story.

'THE next day the doctor set out for his par-'sonage, which was about thirty miles distant, whi-'ther Amelia and myself accompanied him, and 'where we stayed with him all the time of his resi-'dence there, being almost three months.

'The situation of the parish under my good 'friend's care is very pleasant. It is placed among 'meadows, washed by a clear trout stream, and 'flanked on both sides with downs. His house, 'indeed, would not much attract the admiration of 'the virtuoso. He built it himself, and it is re-'markable only for its plainness; with which the 'furniture so well agrees, that there is no one thing 'in it that may not be absolutely necessary, except 'books, and the prints of Mr. Hogarth, whom he 'calls a moral satirist.

'Nothing, however, can be imagined more 'agreeable than the life that the doctor leads in this 'homely house, which he calls his earthly paradise. 'All his parishioners, whom he treats as his chil-'dren, regard him as their common father. Once

'in a week he constantly visits every house in the 'parish, examines, commends, and rebukes, as he 'finds occasion. This is practised likewise by his 'curate in his absence; and so good an effect is 'produced by this their care, that no quarrels 'ever proceed either to blows or law-suits; no 'beggar is to be found in the whole parish; nor 'did I ever hear a very profane oath all the time I 'lived in it.

'But to return, from so agreeable a digression, 'to my own affairs, that are much less worth your 'attention. In the midst of all the pleasures I 'tasted in this sweet place, and in the most delight- 'ful company, the woman and man whom I loved 'above all things, melancholy reflections concern- 'ing my unhappy circumstances would often steal 'into my thoughts. My fortune was now reduced 'to less than forty pounds a year; I had already 'two children, and my dear Amelia was again with 'child.

'One day the doctor found me sitting by myself, 'and employed in melancholy contemplations on 'this subject. He told me he had observed me 'growing of late very serious; that he knew the 'occasion, and neither wondered at, nor blamed me. 'He then asked me if I had any prospect of going 'again into the army; if not, what scheme of life 'I proposed to myself?

'I told him, that as I had no powerful friends, 'I could have but little expectations in a military 'way; that I was as incapable of thinking of any 'other scheme, as all business required some know- 'ledge or experience, and likewise money to set 'up with; of all which I was destitute.

"You must know then, child," said the doctor, "that I have been thinking on this subject as well "as you; for I can think, I promise you, with a

"pleasant countenance." These were his words. "As to the army, perhaps means might be found "of getting you another commission; but my "daughter seems to have a violent objection to it; "and to be plain, I fancy you yourself will find "no glory make you amends for your absence "from her. And for my part," said he, "I never "think those men wise, who, for any worldly in-"terest, forego the greatest happiness of their lives. "If I mistake not," says he, "a country life, where "you could be always together, would make you "both much happier people."

'I answered, that of all things I preferred it 'most; and I believed Amelia was of the same 'opinion.

'The doctor, after a little hesitation, proposed to 'me to turn farmer, and offered to let me his par-'sonage, which was then become vacant. He said, 'it was a farm which required but little stock, and 'that little should not be wanting.

'I embraced this offer very eagerly, and with 'great thankfulness, and immediately repaired to 'Amelia to communicate it to her, and to know 'her sentiments.

'Amelia received the news with the highest tran-'sports of joy; she said that her greatest fear had 'always been of my entering again into the army. 'She was so kind as to say, that all stations of life 'were equal to her, unless as one afforded her more 'of my company than another. "And as to our "children," said she, "let us breed them up to an "humble fortune, and they will be contented "with it; for none," added my angel, "de-"serves happiness, or indeed, are capable of it, "who make any particular station a necessary in-"gredient."

'Thus, Madam, you see me degraded from my

'former rank in life; no longer Captain Booth, but 'Farmer Booth at your service.

'During my first year's continuance in this new 'scene of life, nothing, I think, remarkable hap-'pened; the history of one day would, indeed, be 'the history of the whole year.'

'Well, pray then,' said Miss Matthews, 'do let 'us hear the history of that day; I have a strange 'curiosity to know how you could kill your time; 'and do, if possible, find out the very best day you 'can.'

'If you command me, Madam,' answered Booth, 'you must yourself be accountable for the dulness 'of the narrative. Nay, I believe you have im-'posed a very difficult task on me; for the greatest 'happiness is incapable of description.

'I rose, then, Madam——'

'O, the moment you waked, undoubtedly,' said Miss Matthews.——

'Usually,' said he, 'between five and six.'

'I will have no usually,' cried Miss Matthews, 'you are confined to a day, and it is to be the best 'and happiest in the year.'

'Nay, Madam,' cries Booth, 'then I must tell 'you the day in which Amelia was brought to bed, 'after a painful and dangerous labour; for that I 'think was the happiest day of my life.'

'I protest,' said she, 'you are become farmer 'Booth, indeed. What a happiness have you paint-'ed to my imagination! you put me in mind of a 'newspaper, where my lady such-a-one is deliver-'ed of a son, to the great joy of some illustrious 'family.'

'Why then, I do assure you, Miss Matthews,' cries Booth, 'I scarce know a circumstance that 'distinguished one day from another. The whole 'was one continued series of love, health, and tran-

'quillity. Our lives resembled a calm sea.'—

'The dullest of all ideas,' cries the lady.

'I know,' said he, 'it must appear dull in de-'scription; for who can describe the pleasures 'which the morning air gives to one in perfect 'health; the flow of spirits which springs up from 'exercise; the delights which parents feel from the 'prattle and innocent follies of their children; the 'joy with which the tender smile of a wife inspires 'a husband; or lastly, the cheerful, solid comfort 'which a fond couple enjoy in each other's conver-'sation.—All these pleasures, and every other of 'which our situation was capable, we tasted in the 'highest degree. Our happiness was, perhaps, too 'great; for fortune seemed to grow envious of it, 'and interposed one of the most cruel accidents that 'could have befallen us, by robbing us of our dear 'friend the doctor.'

'I am sorry for it,' said Miss Matthews. 'He 'was indeed a valuable man, and I never heard of 'his death before.'

'Long may it be before any one hears of it,' cries Booth. 'He is, indeed, dead to us; but will, I 'hope, enjoy many happy years of life. You know, 'Madam, the obligations he had to his patron the 'earl; indeed, it was impossible to be once in his 'company without hearing of them; I am sure 'you will neither wonder that he was chosen to at-'tend the young lord in his travels as his tutor, nor 'that the good man, however disagreeable it might 'be (as in fact it was) to his inclination, should 'comply with the earnest request of his friend and 'patron.

'By this means I was bereft not only of the best 'companion in the world, but of the best counsellor; 'a loss of which I have since felt the bitter conse-'quence; for no greater advantage, I am convinced,

'can arrive to a young man who hath any degree 'of understanding, than an intimate converse with 'one of riper years, who is not only able to advise, 'but who knows the manner of advising. By this 'means alone, youth can enjoy the benefit of the 'experience of age, and that at a time of life when 'such experience will be of more service to a man, 'than when he hath lived long enough to acquire 'it of himself.

'From want of my sage counsellor, I now fell 'into many errors. The first of these was in en-'larging my business, by adding a farm of one 'hundred a year to the parsonage; in renting 'which I had also as bad a bargain as the doctor 'had before given me a good one. The conse-'quence of which was, that whereas, at the end of 'the first year, I was worth upwards of fourscore 'pounds; at the end of the second, I was near 'half that sum worse (as the phrase is) than no-'thing.

'A second folly I was guilty of, in uniting fa-'milies with the curate of the parish, who had just 'married, as my wife and I thought, a very good 'sort of a woman. We had not, however, lived 'one month together, before I plainly perceived 'this good sort of a woman had taken a great pre-'judice against my Amelia; for which, if I had 'not known something of the human passions, and 'that high place which envy holds among them, I 'should not have been able to account; for so far 'was my angel from having given her any cause of 'dislike, that she had treated her not only with ci-'vility, but kindness.

'Besides superiority in beauty, which, I believe, 'all the world would have allowed to Amelia, there 'was another cause of this envy, which I am almost 'ashamed to mention, as it may well be called my

'greatest folly. You are to know then, Madam, 'that from a boy I had been always fond of driving 'a coach, in which I valued myself on having some 'skill. This, perhaps, was an innocent, but I al-'low it to have been a childish vanity. As I had 'an opportunity, therefore, of buying an old coach 'and harness very cheap (indeed they cost me but 'twelve pounds) and as I considered that the same 'horses which drew my waggons, would likewise 'draw my coach, I resolved on indulging myself in 'the purchase.

'The consequence of setting up this poor old 'coach is inconceivable. Before this, as my wife 'and myself had very little distinguished ourselves 'from the other farmers and their wives, either 'in our dress, or our way of living, they treated us 'as their equals; but now they began to consider 'us as elevating ourselves into a state of superiority, 'and immediately began to envy, hate, and declare 'war against us. The neighbouring little squires, 'too, were uneasy to see a poor renter become their 'equal in a matter in which they placed so much 'dignity; and not doubting but it arose in me 'from the same ostentation, they began to hate me 'likewise, and to turn my equipage into ridicule; 'asserting that my horses, which were as well 'matched as any in the kingdom, were of different 'colours and sizes; with much more of that kind 'of wit, the only basis of which is lying.

'But what will appear more surprising to you, 'Madam, was, that the curate's wife, who being 'lame, had more use of the coach than my Amelia '(indeed, she seldom went to church in any other 'manner) was one of my bitterest enemies on the 'occasion. If she had ever any dispute with Ame-'lia, which all the sweetness of my poor girl could 'not sometimes avoid, she was sure to introduce

'with a malicious sneer, "Though my husband "doth not keep a coach, Madam." Nay, she 'took this opportunity to upbraid my wife with 'the loss of her fortune, alleging, That some folks 'might have had as good pretensions to a coach 'as other folks, and a better too, as they brought 'a better fortune to their husbands, but that all 'people had not the art of making brick without 'straw.

'You will wonder, perhaps, Madam, how I can 'remember such stuff, which, indeed, was a long 'time only matter of amusement to both Amelia 'and myself; but we, at last, experienced the mis- 'chievous nature of envy, and that it tends rather 'to produce tragical than comical events. My 'neighbours now began to conspire against me. 'They nicknamed me in derision, the Squire Far- 'mer. Whatever I bought, I was sure to buy 'dearer, and when I sold, I was obliged to sell 'cheaper than any other. In fact, they were all 'united; and while they every day committed tres- 'passes on my lands with impunity, if any of my 'cattle escaped into their fields, I was either forced 'to enter into a law-suit, or to make amends four- 'fold for the damage sustained.

'The consequences of all this could be no other 'than that ruin which ensued. Without tiring 'you with particulars, before the end of four years, 'I became involved in debt near three hundred 'pounds, more than the value of all my effects. 'My landlord seized my stock for rent; and to 'avoid immediate confinement in prison, I was 'forced to leave the country, with all that I hold 'dear in the world, my wife, and my poor little 'family.

'In this condition, I arrived in town five or six 'days ago. I had just taken a lodging in the verge

'of the court, and had writ my dear Amelia word 'where she might find me, when she had settled 'her affairs in the best manner she could. That 'very evening, as I was returning home from a 'coffee-house, a fray happening in the street, I 'endeavoured to assist the injured party, when I 'was seized by the watch, and after being confined 'all night in the round-house, was conveyed in 'the morning before a justice of peace, who com-'mitted me hither; where I should probably have 'starved, had I not, from your hands, found a 'most unaccountable preservation.—And here, give 'me leave to assure you, my dear Miss Matthews, 'that whatever advantage I may have reaped from 'your misfortune, I sincerely lament it; nor would 'I have purchased any relief to myself at the price 'of seeing you in this dreadful place.'

He spake these last words with great tenderness; for he was a man of consummate good-nature, and had formerly had much affection for this young lady; indeed, more than the generality of people are capable of entertaining for any person whatsoever.

AMELIA.

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

Containing very mysterious matter.

MISS Matthews did not in the least fall short of Mr. Booth in expressions of tenderness. Her eyes, the most eloquent orators on such occasions, exerted their utmost force; and, at the conclusion of his speech, she cast a look as languishingly sweet as ever Cleopatra gave to Antony. In real fact, this Mr. Booth had been her first love, and had made more impressions on her young heart, which the learned in this branch of philosophy affirm, and perhaps truly, are never to be eradicated.

When Booth had finished his story, a silence ensued of some minutes; an interval which the painter would describe much better than the writer. Some readers, may, however, be able to make pretty pertinent conjectures, by what I have said above, especially when they are told that Miss Matthews broke the silence by a sigh, and cried, 'Why is

'Mr. Booth unwilling to allow me the happiness 'of thinking my misfortunes have been of some 'little advantage to him? sure the happy Amelia 'would not be so selfish to envy me that pleasure. 'No; not if she was as much the fondest as she is 'the happiest of women.' 'Good Heavens! Ma-'dam,' said he, 'do you call my poor Amelia the 'happiest of women?' 'Indeed I do,' answered she briskly.—'O Mr. Booth! there is a speck of 'white in her fortune, which when it falls to the 'lot of a sensible woman, makes her full amends 'for all the crosses which can attend her—Perhaps 'she may not be sensible of it; but if it had been 'my blest fate.—O Mr. Booth! could I have thought 'when we were first acquainted, that the most 'agreeable man in the world had been capable of 'making the kind, the tender, the affectionate hus-'band—the happy Amelia, in those days, was un-'known; Heaven had not then given her a pros-'pect of the happiness it intended her—but yet it 'did intend it her; for sure there is a fatality in the 'affairs of love; and the more I reflect on my own 'life, the more I am convinced of it. O Heavens! 'how a thousand little circumstances crowd into 'my mind. When you first marched into our 'town, you had then the colours in your hand; as 'you passed under the window where I stood, my 'glove, by accident, dropt into the street; you 'stooped, took up my glove, and putting it upon 'the spike belonging to your colours, lifted it up 'to the window. Upon this a young lady, who 'stood by, said, "So, Miss, the young officer hath "accepted your challenge." I blushed then, and 'I blush now, when I confess to you, I thought 'you the prettiest young fellow I had ever seen; 'and, upon my soul, I believe you was then the 'prettiest fellow in the world.'—Booth here made

a low bow, and cried, 'O dear Madam, how ig-'norant was I of my own happiness!' 'Would 'you really have thought so?' answered she;—'however, there is some politeness, if there be no 'sincerity in what you say.' Here the governor of the enchanted castle interrupted them, and entering the room without any ceremony, acquainted the lady and gentleman, that it was locking-up time; and addressing Booth by the name of captain, asked him if he would not please to have a bed; adding, that he might have one in the next room to the lady, but that it would come dear; for that he never let a bed in that room under a guinea, nor could he afford it cheaper to his father.

No answer was made to this proposal; but Miss Matthews, who had already learnt some of the ways of the house, said, she believed Mr. Booth would like to drink a glass of something; upon which the governor immediately trumpeted forth the praises of his rack-punch, and without waiting for any farther commands, presently produced a large bowl of that liquor.

The governor, having recommended the goodness of his punch by a hearty draught, began to revive the other matter, saying, that he was just going to bed, and must first lock up.—'But suppose,' said Miss Matthews, with a smile, 'the captain and 'I should have a mind to sit up all night.'—'With 'all my heart,' said the governor; 'but I expect a 'consideration for those matters. For my part, I 'don't inquire into what doth not concern me; but 'single and double are two things. If I lock up 'double, I expect half a guinea; and I'm sure the 'captain cannot think that's out of the way—It is 'but the price of a bagnio.'

Miss Matthews's face became the colour of scarlet at those words—However, she mustered up her

spirits, and turning to Booth, said, 'What say you, 'captain? for my own part, I had never less inclination to sleep; which hath the greater charms 'for you, the punch or the pillow?' 'I hope, Madam,' answered Booth, 'you have a better opinion of me, than to doubt my preferring Miss 'Matthews's conversation to either.' 'I assure 'you,' replied she, 'it is no compliment to you, to 'say I prefer yours to sleep at this time.'

The governor, then, having received his fee, departed; and, turning the key, left the gentleman and the lady to themselves.

In imitation of him, we will lock up likewise a scene, which we do not think proper to expose to the eyes of the public. If any over curious readers should be disappointed on this occasion, we will recommend such readers to the apologies with which certain gay ladies have lately been pleased to oblige the world, where they will possibly find every thing recorded that past at this interval.

But though we decline painting the scene, it is not our intention to conceal from the world the frailty of Mr. Booth, or of his fair partner, who certainly past that evening in a manner inconsistent with the strict rules of virtue and chastity.

To say the truth, we are much more concerned for the behaviour of the gentleman than of the lady, not only for his sake, but for the sake of the best woman in the world, whom we should be sorry to consider as yoked to a man of no worth nor honour.

We desire, therefore, the good-natured and candid reader will be pleased to weigh attentively the several unlucky circumstances which concurred so critically, that fortune seemed to have used her utmost endeavours to ensnare poor Booth's constancy. Let the reader set before his eyes a fine young wo-

man, in a manner, a first love, conferring obligations, and using every art to soften, to allure, to win, and to enflame; let him consider the time and place; let him remember that Mr. Booth was a young fellow, in the highest vigour of life; and lastly, let him add one single circumstance, that the parties were alone together; and then, if he will not acquit the defendant, he must be convicted; for I have nothing more to say in his defence.

CHAP. II.

The latter Part of which we expect will please our Reader better than the former.

A WHOLE week did our lady and gentleman live in this criminal conversation, in which the happiness of the former was much more perfect than that of the latter; for though the charms of Miss Matthews, and her excessive endearments, sometimes lulled every thought in the sweet lethargy of pleasure; yet in the intervals of his fits, his virtue alarmed and roused him, and brought the image of poor injured Amelia to haunt and torment him. In fact, if we regard this world only, it is the interest of every man to be either perfectly good, or completely bad. He had better destroy his conscience, than gently wound it. The many bitter reflections which every bad action costs a mind in which there are any remains of goodness, are not to be compensated by the highest pleasures which such an action can produce.

So it happened to Mr. Booth. Repentance never failed to follow his transgressions; and yet so per-

verse is our judgment, and so slippery is the descent of vice, when once we are entered into it, the same crime which he now repented of, became a reason for doing that which was to cause his future repentance; and he continued to sin on, because he had begun. His repentance, however, returned still heavier and heavier, till, at last, it flung him into a melancholy, which Miss Matthews plainly perceived, and at which she could not avoid expressing some resentment in obscure hints, and ironical compliments on Amelia's superiority to her whole sex, who could not cloy a gay young fellow by many years possession. She would then repeat the compliments which others had made to her own beauty —and could not forbear once crying out: 'Upon 'my soul, my dear Billy, I believe the chief disad-'vantage on my side, is in my superior fondness; 'for love, in the minds of men, hath one quality, 'at least, of a fever, which is to prefer coldness in 'the object. Confess, dear Will, is there not some-'thing vastly refreshing in the cool air of a prude.' —Booth fetched a deep sigh, and begged her never more to mention Amelia's name.—'O Will,' cries she, 'did that request proceed from the motive I 'could wish, I should be the happiest of woman-'kind.'—'You would not sure, Madam,' said Booth, 'desire a sacrifice which I must be a villain 'to make to any?'——'Desire!' answered she, 'are there any bounds to the desires of love! have 'not I been sacrificed? hath not my first love been 'torn from my bleeding heart?—I claim a prior 'right—As for sacrifices, I can make them too; 'and would sacrifice the whole world at the least 'call of my love.'

Here she delivered a letter to Booth, which she had received within an hour, the contents of which were these:

'DEAREST MADAM,

'THOSE only who truly know what love is, can 'have any conception of the horrors I felt at hear- 'ing of your confinement at my arrival in town, 'which was this morning. I immediately sent my 'lawyer to inquire into the particulars, who brought 'me the agreeable news that the man, whose 'heart's blood ought not to be valued at the rate 'of a single hair of yours, is entirely out of all dan- 'ger, and that you might be admitted to bail. I 'presently ordered him to go with two of my 'tradesmen, who are to be bound in any sum for 'your appearance, if he should be mean enough to 'prosecute you. Though you may expect my at- 'torney with you soon, I would not delay sending 'this, as I hope the news will be agreeable to you. 'My chariot will attend at the same time, to carry 'you wherever you please. You may easily guess 'what a violence I have done to myself in not wait- 'ing on you in person; but I, who know your 'delicacy, feared it might offend, and that you 'might think me ungenerous enough to hope from 'your distresses an unhappiness which I am re- 'solved to owe to your free gift alone, when your 'good-nature shall induce you to bestow on me 'what no man living can merit. I beg you will 'pardon all the contents of this hasty letter, and 'do me the honour of believing me,

'Dearest Madam,

'Your most passionate admirer,

'and most obedient humble servant,

'DAMON.'

Booth thought he had somewhere before seen the same hand; but in his present hurry of spirits could

not recollect whose it was; nor did the lady give him any time for reflection: for he had scarce read the letter when she produced a little bit of paper, and cried out,' 'Here, Sir, here are the contents 'which he fears will offend me.' She then put a bank-bill of a hundred pounds into Mr. Booth's hand, and asked him with a smile, if he did not think she had reason to be offended with so much insolence?

Before Booth could return any answer, the governor arrived, and introduced Mr. Rogers the attorney, who acquainted the lady, that he had brought her discharge from her confinement, and that a chariot waited at the door to attend her wherever she pleased.

She received the discharge from Mr. Rogers, and said, she was very much obliged to the gentleman who employed him, but that she would not make use of the chariot, as she had no notion of leaving that wretched place in a triumphant manner; in which resolution, when the attorney found her obstinate, he withdrew, as did the governor, with many bows, and as many ladyships.

They were no sooner gone, than Booth asked the lady, Why she should refuse the chariot of a gentleman who had behaved with such excessive respect? She looked earnestly upon him and cried, 'How 'unkind is that question! do you imagine I would 'go and leave you in such a situation? thou know'est but little of Calista. Why, do you think I 'would accept this hundred pounds from a man I 'dislike, unless it was to be serviceable to the man 'I love? I insist on your taking it as your own, 'and using whatever you want of it.'

Booth protested in the solemnest manner, that he would not touch a shilling of it, saying, he had already received too many obligations at her hands,

and more than ever he should be able, he feared, to repay. 'How unkind,' answered she, 'is every 'word you say? why will you mention obliga-'tions? love never confers any. It doth every 'thing for its own sake. I am not therefore 'obliged to the man whose passion makes him ge-'nerous; for I feel how inconsiderable the whole 'world would appear to me, if I could throw it 'after my heart.'

Much more of this kind past, she still pressing the bank-note upon him, and he as absolutely refusing, till Booth left the lady to dress herself, and went to walk in the area of the prison.

Miss Matthews now applied to the governor, to know by what means she might procure the captain his liberty. The governor answered, 'As he 'cannot get bail, it will be a difficult matter; and 'money, to be sure, there must be; for people, no 'doubt, expect to touch on these occasions. When 'prisoners have not wherewithal as the law requires 'to entitle themselves to justice, why they must be 'beholden to other people, to give them their li-'berty; and people will not, to be sure, suffer 'others to be beholden to them for nothing, where-'of there is good reason; for how should we all 'live if it was not for these things!'——'Well, 'well,' said she, 'and how much will it cost?— 'How much!' answered he,—'How much!— 'why, let me see.'—Here he hesitated some time, and then answered, 'That for five guineas he 'would undertake to procure the captain his dis-'charge.' That being the sum which he computed to remain in the lady's pocket; for as to the gentleman's, he had long been acquainted with the emptiness of it.

Miss Matthews, to whom money was as dirt (indeed she may be thought not to have known the

value of it) delivered him the bank-bill, and bid him get it changed; for if the whole, says she, will procure him his liberty, he shall have it this evening.

'The whole, Madam,' answered the governor, as soon as he had recovered his breath; for it almost forsook him at the sight of the black word hundred. 'No, no.—There might be people indeed—but I 'am not one of those. A hundred! no, nor no- 'thing like it.—As for myself, as I said, I will be 'content with five guineas, and I am sure that's 'little enough. What other people will expect, I 'cannot exactly say.—To be sure his worship's 'clerk will expect to touch pretty handsomely; as 'for his worship himself, he never touches any 'thing, that is, not to speak of; but then the con- 'stable will expect something, and the watchmen 'must have something, and the lawyers on both 'sides they must have their fees for finishing.'— 'Well,' said she, 'I leave all to you. If it costs 'me twenty pounds I will have him discharged 'this afternoon.—But you must give his discharge 'into my hands, without letting the captain know 'any thing of the matter.'

The governor promised to obey her commands in every particular; nay, he was so very industrious, that though dinner was just then coming upon the table, at her earnest request, he set out immediately on the purpose, and went, as he said, in pursuit of the lawyer.

All the other company assembled at table as usual, where poor Booth was the only person out of spirits. This was imputed by all present to a wrong cause; nay, Miss Matthews herself either could not or would not, suspect that there was any thing deeper than the despair of being speedily discharged, that lay heavy on his mind.

However, the mirth of the rest, and a pretty liberal quantity of punch, which he swallowed after dinner (for Miss Matthews had ordered a very large bowl at her own expense, to entertain the good company at her farewel) so far exhilarated his spirits, that, when the young lady and he retired to their tea, he had all the marks of gaiety in his countenance, and his eyes sparkled with good humour.

The gentleman and lady had spent about two hours in tea and conversation, when the governor returned, and privately delivered to the lady the discharge for her friend, and the sum of eighty-two pounds five shillings; the rest having been, he said, disbursed in the business, of which he was ready at any time to render an exact account.

Miss Matthews being again alone with Mr. Booth, she put the discharge into his hands, desiring him to ask her no questions; and adding, 'I think, Sir, 'we have neither of us now any thing more to do 'at this place.' She then summoned the governor, and ordered a bill of that day's expense, for long scores were not usual there; and at the same time ordered a hackney-coach, without having yet determined whither she would go, but fully determined she was, wherever she went, to take Mr. Booth with her.

The governor was now approaching with a long roll of paper, when a faint voice was heard to cry out hastily, 'Where is he?'—and presently a female spectre, all pale and breathless, rushed into the room, and fell into Mr. Booth's arms, where she immediately fainted away.

Booth made a shift to support his lovely burthen; though he was himself in a condition very little different from hers. Miss Matthews likewise, who presently recollected the face of Amelia, was struck

motionless with the surprise; nay, the governor himself, though not easily moved at sights of horror, stood aghast, and neither offered to speak nor stir.

Happily for Amelia, the governess of the mansion had, out of curiosity, followed her into the room, and was the only useful person present on this occasion; she immediately called for water, and ran to the lady's assistance, fell to loosening her stays, and performed all the offices proper at such a season; which had so good an effect, that Amelia soon recovered the disorder which the violent agitation of her spirits had caused, and found herself alive and awake in her husband's arms.

Some tender caresses, and a soft whisper or two past privately between Booth and his lady; nor was it without great difficulty, that poor Amelia put some restraint on her fondness, in a place so improper for a tender interview. She now cast her eyes round the room, and fixing them on Miss Matthews, who stood like a statue; she soon recollected her, and addressing her by her name, said, 'Sure, Madam, I cannot be mistaken in those features; though meeting you here might almost make me suspect my memory.'

Miss Matthews's face was now all covered with scarlet. The reader may easily believe she was on no account pleased with Amelia's presence; indeed, she expected from her some of those insults, of which virtuous women are generally so liberal to a frail sister; but she was mistaken, Amelia was not one

> Who thought the nation ne'er would thrive,
> Till all the whores were burnt alive.

Her virtue could support itself with its own intrinsic worth, without borrowing any assistance from the vices of other women; and she considered their natural infirmities as the objects of pity, not of contempt or abhorrence.

When Amelia therefore perceived the visible confusion in Miss Matthews, she presently called to remembrance some stories which she had imperfectly heard; for as she was not naturally attentive to scandal, and had kept very little company since her return to England, she was far from being a mistress of the lady's whole history. However, she had heard enough to impute her confusion to the right cause; she advanced to her, and told her, she was extremely sorry to meet her in such a place, but hoped that no very great misfortune was the occasion of it.

Miss Matthews began, by degrees, to recover her spirits. She answered, with a reserved air, 'I am 'much obliged to you, Madam, for your concern; 'we are all liable to misfortunes in this world. In'deed, I know not why I should be much ashamed 'of being in any place where I am in such good 'company.'

Here Booth interposed. He had before acquainted Amelia in a whisper, that his confinement was at an end. 'The unfortunate accident, my dear,' said he, 'which brought this young lady to this 'melancholy place, is entirely determined; and 'she is now as absolutely at her liberty as myself.'

Amelia imputing the extreme coldness and reserve of the lady to the cause already mentioned, advanced still more and more in proportion as she drew back; till the governor, who had withdrawn some time, returned, and acquainted Miss Matthews that her coach was at the door; upon which the company soon separated. Amelia and Booth went together

in Amelia's coach, and poor Miss Matthews was obliged to retire alone, after having satisfied the demands of the governor, which in one day only had amounted to a pretty considerable sum; for he, with great dexterity, proportioned the bills to the abilities of his guests.

It may seem, perhaps, wonderful to some readers, that Miss Matthews should have maintained that cold reserve towards Amelia, so as barely to keep within the rules of civility, instead of embracing an opportunity which seemed to offer, of gaining some degree of intimacy with a wife, whose husband she was so fond of; but, besides that, her spirits were entirely disconcerted by so sudden and unexpected a disappointment; and besides the extreme horrors which she conceived at the presence of her rival, there is, I believe, something so outrageously suspicious in the nature of all vice, especially when joined with any great degree of pride, that the eyes of those whom we imagine privy to our failings, are intolerable to us, and we are apt to aggravate their opinions to our disadvantage far beyond the reality.

CHAP. III.

Containing wise Observations of the Author, and other Matters.

THERE is nothing more difficult than to lay down any fixed and certain rules for happiness, or indeed to judge with any precision of the happiness of others, from the knowledge of external circumstances. There is sometimes a little speck of black

in the brightest and gayest colours of fortune, which contaminates and deadens the whole. On the contrary, when all without looks dark and dismal, there is often a secret ray of light within the mind, which turns every thing to real joy and gladness.

I have in the course of my life seen many occasions to make this observation; and Mr. Booth was at present a very pregnant instance of its truth.—He was just delivered from a prison, and in the possession of his beloved wife and children; and (which might be imagined greatly to augment his joy) fortune had done all this for him within an hour, without giving him the least warning or reasonable expectation of this strange reverse in his circumstances; and yet it is certain, that there were very few men in the world more seriously miserable than he was at this instant. A deep melancholy seized his mind, and cold damp sweats overspread his person, so that he was scarce animated; and poor Amelia, instead of a fond warm husband, bestowed her caresses on a dull lifeless lump of clay. He endeavoured, however, at first, as much as possible, to conceal what he felt, and attempted, what is the hardest of all tasks, to act the part of a happy man; but he found no supply of spirits to carry on this deceit, and would have probably sunk under his attempt, had not poor Amelia's simplicity helped him to another fallacy, in which he had much better success.

This worthy woman very plainly perceived the disorder in her husband's mind; and having no doubt of the cause of it, especially when she saw the tears stand in his eyes at the sight of his children, threw her arms round his neck, and embracing him with rapturous fondness, cried out, 'My dear Billy, 'let nothing make you uneasy. Heaven will, I

'doubt not, provide for us and these poor babes. 'Great fortunes are not necessary to happiness. 'For my own part, I can level my mind with any 'state; and for those poor little things, whatever 'condition of life we breed them to, that will be 'sufficient to maintain them in. How many thou-'sands abound in affluence, whose fortunes are 'much lower than ours! for it is not from nature, 'but from education and habit, that our wants are 'chiefly derived. Make yourself easy, therefore, my 'dear love; for you have a wife who will think 'herself happy with you, and endeavour to make 'you so in any situation. Fear nothing, Billy, in-'dustry will always provide us a wholesome meal; 'and I will take care, that neatness and cheerfulness 'shall make it a pleasant one.'

Booth presently took the cue which she had given him. He fixed his eyes on her for a minute with great earnestness and inexpressible tenderness; and then cried, 'O my Amelia, how much are 'you my superior in every perfection! how wise, 'how great, how noble are your sentiments! why 'can I not imitate what I so much admire? why 'can I not look with your constancy, on those dear 'little pledges of our loves? All my philosophy 'is baffled with the thought that my Amelia's chil-'dren are to struggle with a cruel, hard, unfeeling 'world, and to buffet those waves of fortune which 'have overwhelmed their father.—Here I own I 'want your firmness, and am not without an ex-'cuse for wanting it; for am I not the cruel cause 'of all your wretchedness? have I not stept be-'tween you and fortune, and been the cursed obsta-'cle to all your greatness and happiness?'

'Say not so, my love,' answered she. 'Great 'I might have been, but never happy with any 'other man. Indeed, dear Billy, I laugh at the

'fears you formerly raised in me; what seemed
'so terrible at a distance, now it approaches
'nearer, appears to have been a mere bugbear—
'and let this comfort you, that I look on myself
'at this day as the happiest of women; nor have
'I done any thing which I do not rejoice in, and
'would, if I had the gift of prescience, do again.'

Booth was so overcome with this behaviour, that he had no words to answer. To say the truth, it was difficult to find any worthy of the occasion. He threw himself prostrate at her feet, whence poor Amelia was forced to use all her strength as well as entreaties to raise, and place him in his chair.

Such is ever the fortitude of perfect innocence, and such the depression of guilt in minds not utterly abandoned. Booth was naturally of a sanguine temper; nor would any such apprehensions as he mentioned have been sufficient to have restrained his joy, at meeting with his Amelia. In fact, a reflection on the injury he had done her was the sole cause of his grief. This it was that enervated his heart, and threw him into agonies, which all that profusion of heroic tenderness that the most excellent of women intended for his comfort, served only to heighten and aggravate; as the more she rose in his admiration, the more she quickened his sense of his own unworthiness.

After a disagreeable evening, the first of that kind that he had ever past with his Amelia, in which he had the utmost difficulty to force a little cheerfulness, and in which her spirits were at length overpowered by discerning the oppression on his, they retired to rest, or rather to misery, which need not be described.

The next morning at breakfast, Booth began to recover a little from his melancholy, and to taste

the company of his children. He now first thought of inquiring of Amelia, by what means she had discovered the place of his confinement. Amelia, after gently rebuking him for not having himself acquainted her with it, informed him, that it was known all over the country, and that she had traced the original of it to her sister; who had spread the news with a malicious joy, and added a circumstance which would have frightened her to death, had not her knowledge of him made her give little credit to it, which was, that he was committed for murder. But though she had discredited this part, she said, that not hearing from him, during several successive posts, made her too apprehensive of the rest; that she got a conveyance therefore for herself and children to Salisbury; from whence the stage-coach had brought them to town, and having deposited the children at his lodging, of which he had sent her an account on his first arrival in town, she took a hack, and came directly to the prison where she heard he was, and where she found him.

Booth excused himself, and with truth, as to his not having writ; for, in fact, he had writ twice from the prison, though he had mentioned nothing of his confinement: but as he sent away his letters after nine at night, the fellow, to whom they were intrusted, had burnt them both for the sake of putting the twopence in his own pocket, or rather in the pocket of the keeper of the next gin-shop.

As to the account which Amelia gave him, it served rather to raise than to satisfy his curiosity. He began to suspect, that some person had seen both him and Miss Matthews together in the prison, and had confounded her case with his; and this the circumstance of murder made the

more probable. But who this person should be, he could not guess. After giving himself therefore some pains in forming conjectures to no purpose, he was forced to rest contented with his ignorance of the real truth.

Two or three days now past without producing any thing remarkable; unless it were, that Booth more and more recovered his spirits, and had now almost regained his former degree of cheerfulness, when the following letter arrived, again to torment him:——

'DEAR BILLY,

'To convince you I am the most reasonable of 'women, I have given you up three whole days 'to the unmolested possession of my fortunate 'rival; I can refrain no longer from letting you 'know that I lodge in Dean-street, not far from 'the church, at the sign of the Pelican and Trum-'pet; where I expect this evening to see you—'Believe me, I am with more affection than any 'other woman in the world can be,

'My dear Billy,

'Your affectionate, fond, doating

'F. MATTHEWS.'

Booth tore the letter with rage, and threw it into the fire; resolving never to visit the lady more, unless it was to pay her the money she had lent him, which he was determined to do the very first opportunity; for it was not at present in his power.

This letter threw him back into his fit of dejection, in which he had not continued long, when a packet from the country brought him the following from his friend Dr. Harrison:

'SIR, *Lyons, January* 21, N. S.

'THOUGH I am now on my return home, I
'have taken up my pen to communicate to you
'some news I have heard from England, which
'gives me much uneasiness, and concerning which
'I can indeed deliver my sentiments with much
'more ease this way than any other. In my answer to your last, I very freely gave you my
'opinion, in which it was my misfortune to disapprove of every step you had taken; but those
'were all pardonable errors. Can you be so partial to yourself, upon cool and sober reflection,
'to think what I am going to mention is so? I
'promise you, it appears to me a folly of so monstrous a kind, that, had I heard it from any but
'a person of the highest honour, I should have
'rejected it as utterly incredible. I hope you
'already guess, what I am about to name; since,
'Heaven forbid, your conduct should afford you
'any choice of such gross instances of weakness.
'In a word, then, you have set up an equipage.
'What shall I invent in your excuse, either to
'others or to myself? In truth, I can find no
'excuse for you, and what is more, I am certain
'you can find none for yourself. I must deal
'therefore very plainly and sincerely with you.
'Vanity is always contemptible; but when joined
'with hishonesty, it becomes odious and detestable. At whose expense are you to support this
'equipage? is it not entirely at the expense of
'others? and will it not finally end in that of your
'poor wife and children? you know you are two
'years in arrears to me. If I could impute this to
'any extraordinary or common accident, I think
'I should never have mentioned it: but I will not
'suffer my money to support the ridiculous,

'and, I must say, criminal vanity of any one. I 'expect, therefore, to find, at my return, that you 'have either discharged my whole debt, or your 'equipage. Let me beg you seriously to consider 'your circumstances and condition in life, and to 'remember that your situation will not justify 'any the least unnecessary expense. *Simply to 'be poor*, says my favourite Greek historian, *was 'not held scandalous by the wise Athenians, but 'highly so, to owe that poverty to our own indis-'cretion.* Present my affections to Mrs. Booth, 'and be assured, that I shall not, without great 'reason, and great pain too, ever cease to be,

'Your most faithful friend,

'R. HARRISON.'

Had this letter come at any other time, it would have given Booth the most sensible affliction; but so totally had the affair of Miss Matthews possessed his mind, that, like a man in the most raging fit of the gout, he was scarce capable of any additional torture; nay, he, even made an use of this latter epistle, as it served to account to Amelia for that concern which he really felt on another account. The poor deceived lady, therefore, applied herself to give him comfort where he least wanted it. She said, he might easily perceive that the matter had been misrepresented to the doctor, who would not, she was sure, retain the least anger against him when he knew the real truth.

After a short conversation on this subject, in which Booth appeared to be greatly consoled by the arguments of his wife, they parted. He went to take a walk in the Park, and she remained at home, to prepare him his dinner.

He was no sooner departed than his little boy,

not quite six years old, said to Amelia, 'La! 'mamma, what is the matter with poor papa, what 'makes him look so as if he was going to cry? he 'is not half so merry as he used to be in the country.' Amelia answered, 'Oh! my dear, 'your papa is only a little thoughtful, he will be 'merry again soon.'—Then looking fondly on her children, she burst into an agony of tears, and cried, 'Oh Heavens! what have these poor little 'infants done? why will the barbarous world en-'deavour to starve them, by depriving us of our 'only friend?— O my dear, your father is ruined, 'and we are undone!'—The children presently accompanied their mother's tears, and the daughter cried,—'Why, will any body hurt poor papa? hath 'he done any harm to any body?'—'No, my dear 'child,' said the mother, 'he is the best man in 'the world, and therefore they hate him.' Upon which the boy, who was extremely sensible at his years, answered, 'Nay, mamma, how can that be? 'have not you often told me, that if I was good, 'every body would love me?' 'All good people 'will,' answered she. 'Why don't they love papa 'then?' replied the child, 'for I am sure he is 'very good.' 'So they do, my dear,' said the mother, 'but there are more bad people in the 'world, and they will hate you for your goodness.' 'Why then bad people,' cries the child, 'are loved 'by more than the good.'—'No matter for that, 'my dear, said she, 'the love of one good person 'is more worth having, than that of a thousand 'wicked ones; nay, if there was no such person 'in the world, still you must be a good boy; for 'there is one in Heaven who will love you, and 'his love is better for you than that of all man-'kind.'

This little dialogue, we are apprehensive, will be

read with contempt by many; indeed, we should not have thought it worth recording, was it not for the excellent example which Amelia here gives to all mothers. This admirable woman never let a day pass, without instructing her children in some lesson of religion and morality. By which means she had, in their tender minds, so strongly annexed the ideas of fear and shame to every idea of evil of which they were susceptible, that it must require great pains and length of habit to separate them. Though she was the tenderest of mothers, she never suffered any symptom of malevolence to shew itself in their most trifling actions without discouragement, without rebuke; and, if it broke forth with any rancour, without punishment. In which she had such success, that not the least marks of pride, envy, malice, or spite discovered itself in any of their little words or deeds.

CHAP. IV.

In which Amelia appears in no unamiable Light.

AMELIA, with the assistance of a little girl, who was their only servant, had drest her dinner; and she had likewise drest herself as neat as any lady, who had a regular set of servants, could have done: when Booth returned, and brought with him his friend James, whom he had met with in the Park; and who, as Booth absolutely refused to dine away from his wife, to whom he had promised to return, had invited himself to dine with him. Amelia had none of that paltry pride which possesses so many of her sex, and which dis-

concerts their tempers, and gives them the air and looks of furies, if their husbands bring in an unexpected guest, without giving them timely warning to provide a sacrifice to their own vanity. Amelia received her husband's friend with the utmost complaisance and good humour; she made indeed some apology for the homeliness of her dinner; but it was politely turned as a compliment to Mr. James's friendship, which could carry him where he was sure of being so ill entertained; and gave not the least hint how magnificently she would have provided, *had she expected the favour of so much good company*. A phrase which is generally meant to contain not only an apology for the lady of the house, but a tacit satire on her guests for their intrusion, and is at least a strong insinuation that they are not welcome.

Amelia failed not to inquire very earnestly after her old friend Mrs. James, formerly Miss Bath, and was very sorry to find that she was not in town. The truth was, as James had married out of a violent liking of, or appetite to, her person, possession had surfeited him, and he was now grown so heartily tired of his wife, that she had very little of his company; she was forced therefore to content herself with being the mistress of a large house and equipage in the country, ten months in the year by herself. The other two he indulged her with the diversions of the town, but then, though they lodged under the same roof, she had little more of her husband's society, than if they had been one hundred miles apart. With all this, as she was a woman of calm passions, she made herself contented; for she had never had any violent affection for James; the match was of the prudent kind, and to her advantage, for his fortune, by the death of an uncle, was become very

considerable; and she had gained every thing by the bargain but a husband, which her constitution suffered her to be very well satisfied without.

When Amelia, after dinner, retired to her children, James began to talk to his friend concerning his affairs. He advised Booth very earnestly to think of getting again into the army, in which he himself had met with such success, that he had obtained the command of a regiment, to which his brother-in-law was lieutenant colonel. These preferments they both owed to the favour of fortune only; for though there was no objection to either of their military characters, yet neither of them had any extraordinary desert; and, if merit in the service was a sufficient recommendation, Booth, who had been twice wounded in the siege, seemed to have the fairest pretensions: but he remained a poor half-pay lieutenant, and the others were, as we have said, one of them a lieutenant-colonel, and the other had a regiment. Such rises we often see in life, without being able to give any satisfactory account of the means, and therefore ascribe them to the good fortune of the person.

Both Colonel James and his brother-in-law were members of parliament; for as the uncle of the former had left him, together with his estate, an almost certain interest in a borough, so he chose to confer this favour on Colonel Bath; a circumstance which would have been highly immaterial to mention here; but as it serves to set forth the goodness of James, who endeavoured to make up in kindness to the family, what he wanted in fondness for his wife.

Colonel James then endeavoured all in his power to persuade Booth to think again of a military life, and very kindly offered him his interest towards obtaining him a company in the regiment

under his command. Booth must have been a madman, in his present circumstances, to have hesitated one moment at accepting such an offer, and he well knew Amelia, notwithstanding her aversion to the army, was much too wise to make the least scruple of giving her consent. Nor was he, as it appeared afterwards, mistaken in his opinion of his wife's understanding: for she made not the least objection when it was communicated to her, but contented herself with an express stipulation, that wherever he was commanded to go (for the regiment was now abroad) she would accompany him.

Booth, therefore, accepted his friend's proposal with a profusion of acknowledgments; and it was agreed, that Booth should draw up a memorial of his pretensions, which Colonel James undertook to present to some man of power, and to back it with all the force he had.

Nor did the friendship of the colonel stop here. 'You will excuse me, dear Booth,' said he, 'if 'after what you have told me,' (for he had been very explicit in revealing his affairs to him) 'I 'suspect you must want money at this time. If 'that be the case, as I am certain it must be, I 'have fifty pieces at your service.' This generosity brought the tears into Booth's eyes; and he at length confest, that he had not five guineas in the house; upon which James gave him a bank-bill for twenty pounds, and said, he would give him thirty more the next time he saw him.

Thus did this generous colonel (for generous he really was to the highest degree) restore peace and comfort to this little family; and by this act of beneficence make two of the worthiest people two of the happiest that evening.

Here, reader, give me leave to stop a minute, to

lament that so few are to be found of this benign disposition; that, while wantonness, vanity, avarice, and ambition are every day rioting and triumphing in the follies and weakness, the ruin and desolation of mankind, scarce one man in a thousand is capable of tasting the happiness of others. Nay, give me leave to wonder that pride, which is constantly struggling, and often imposing on itself to gain some little pre-eminence, should so seldom hint to us the only certain as well as laudable way of setting ourselves above another man, and that is, by becoming his benefactor.

CHAP. V.

Containing an Eulogium upon Innocence, and other grave Matters.

BOOTH past that evening, and all the succeeding day, with his Amelia, without the interruption of almost a single thought concerning Miss Matthews, after having determined to go on the Sunday, the only day he could venture without the verge in the present state of his affairs, and pay her what she had advanced for him in the prison. But she had not so long patience; for the third day, while he was sitting with Amelia, a letter was brought to him. As he knew the hand, he immediately put it in his pocket unopened, not without such an alteration in his countenance, that had Amelia, who was then playing with one of the children, cast her eyes towards him, she must have remarked it. This accident, however, luckily gave him time to recover himself; for Amelia was so deeply engaged with the little one, that she did not

even remark the delivery of the letter. The maid soon after returned into the room, saying, the chairman desired to know if there was any answer to the letter—' What letter,' cries Booth.—' The letter ' I gave you just now,' answered the girl.—' Sure,' cries Booth, ' the child is mad, you gave me no ' letter,'—' Yes, indeed, I did, Sir,' said the poor girl. ' Why, then, as sure as fate,' cries Booth, ' I threw it into the fire in my reverie; why, ' child, why did you not tell me it was a letter? ' bid the chairman come up,—stay, I will go down ' myself; for he will otherwise dirt the stairs with ' his feet.'

Amelia was gently chiding the girl for her carelessness, when Booth returned, saying, it was very true that she had delivered him a letter from Colonel James, and that perhaps it might be of consequence. ' However,' says he, ' I will step to ' the coffee-house, and send him an account of ' this strange accident, which I know he will pardon in my present situation.'

Booth was overjoyed at this escape, which poor Amelia's total want of all jealousy and suspicion made it very easy for him to accomplish; but his pleasure was considerably abated, when, upon opening the letter, he found it to contain, mixed with several very strong expressions of love, some pretty warm ones of the upbraiding kind; but what most alarmed him was a hint, that it was in her (Miss Matthews's) power, to make Amelia as miserable as herself. Besides the general knowledge of

——— *Furens quid fœmina possit*,

he had more particular reasons to apprehend the rage of a lady, who had given so strong an instance how far she could carry her revenge. She

had already sent a chairman to his lodgings, with a positive command not to return without an answer to her letter. This might of itself have possibly occasioned a discovery; and he thought he had great reason to fear, that if she did not carry matters so far as purposely and avowedly to reveal the secret to Amelia, her indiscretion would at least effect the discovery of that which he would at any price have concealed. Under these terrors he might, I believe, be considered as the most wretched of human beings.

O innocence, how glorious and happy a portion art thou to the breast that possesses thee! thou fearest neither the eyes nor the tongues of men. Truth, the most powerful of all things, is thy strongest friend; and the brighter the light is in which thou art displayed, the more it discovers thy trancendent beauties. Guilt, on the contrary, like a base thief, suspects every eye that beholds him to be privy to his transgressions, and every tongue that mentions his name to be proclaiming them. Fraud and falsehood are his weak and treacherous allies; and he lurks trembling in the dark, dreading every ray of light, lest it should discover him, and give him up to shame and punishment.

While Booth was walking in the Park with all these horrors in his mind, he again met his friend Colonel James, who soon took notice of that deep concern which the other was incapable of hiding. After some little conversation, Booth said, 'My 'dear colonel, I am sure I must be the most insen-'sible of men, if I did not look on you as the best 'and the truest friend; I will therefore, without 'scruple, repose a confidence in you of the highest 'kind. I have often made you privy to my ne-'cessities, I will now acquaint you with my shame,

'provided you have leisure enough to give me a 'hearing: for I must open to you a long history, 'since I will not reveal my fault, without inform-'ing you, at the same time, of those circum-'stances which, I hope, will in some measure 'excuse it.'

The colonel very readily agreed to give his friend a patient hearing. So they walked directly to a coffee-house at the corner of Spring-Garden, where, being in a room by themselves, Booth opened his whole heart, and acquainted the colonel with his amour with Miss Matthews, from the very beginning to his receiving that letter which had caused all his present uneasiness, and which he now delivered into his friend's hand.

The colonel read the letter very attentively twice over (he was silent indeed long enough to have read it oftener); and then, turning to Booth, said, 'Well, Sir; and is it so grievous a calamity 'to be the object of a young lady's affection; es-'pecially of one whom you allow to be so ex-'tremely handsome?' 'Nay, but my dear friend,' cries Booth, 'do not jest with me; you who 'know my Amelia.' 'Well, my dear friend,' answered James, and you know Amelia, and this 'lady too—But what would you have me do for 'you?' 'I would have you give me your advice,' says Booth, 'by what method I shall get rid of 'this dreadful woman without a discovery.' 'And 'do you really,' cries the other, 'desire to get rid 'of her?' 'Can you doubt it,' saith Booth, 'after 'what I have communicated to you, and after 'what you yourself have seen in my family? for 'I hope, notwithstanding this fatal slip, I do not 'appear to you in the light of a profligate.' 'Well,' answered James, 'and whatever light I 'may appear to you in, if you are really tired of

'the lady, and if she be really what you have re-'presented her, I'll endeavour to take her off your 'hands: but I insist upon it, that you do not de-'ceive me in any particular.' Booth protested in the most solemn manner, that every word which he had spoken was strictly true; and being asked whether he would give his honour never more to visit the lady, he assured James that he never would. He then, at his friend's request, delivered him Miss Mattews's letter, in which was a second direction to her lodgings, and declared to him, that if he could bring him safely out of this terrible affair, he should think himself to have a still higher obligation to his friendship, than any which he had already received from it.

Booth pressed the colonel to go home with him to dinner; but he excused himself, being, as he said, already engaged. However, he undertook in the afternoon to do all in his power, that Booth should receive no more alarms from the quarter of Miss Matthews, whom the colonel undertook to pay all the demands she had on his friend. They then separated. The colonel went to dinner at the King's-Arms, and Booth returned in high spirits to meet his Amelia.

The next day, early in the morning, the colonel came to the coffee-house, and sent for his friend, who lodged but at a little distance. The colonel told him he had a little exaggerated the lady's beauty; however, he said, he excused that: 'For 'you might think, perhaps,' cries he, 'that your 'inconstancy to the finest woman in the world 'might want some excuse. Be that as it will,' said he; 'you may make yourself easy, as it will 'be, I am convinced, your own fault, if you have 'ever any further molestation from Miss Mat-'thews.'

Booth poured forth very warmly a great profusion of gratitude on this occasion; and nothing more anywise material past at this interview, which was very short, the colonel being in a great hurry, as he had, he said, some business of very great importance to transact that morning.

The colonel had now seen Booth twice, without remembering to give him the thirty pounds. This the latter imputed entirely to forgetfulness; for he had always found the promises of the former to be equal in value with the notes or bonds of other people. He was more surprised at what happened the next day, when meeting his friend in the Park, he received only a cold salute from him; and though he past him five or six times, and the colonel was walking with a single officer of no great rank, and with whom he seemed in no earnest conversation, yet could not Booth, who was alone, obtain any further notice from him.

This gave the poor man some alarm; though he could scarce persuade himself there was any design in all this coldness or forgetfulness. Once he imagined that he had lessened himself in the colonel's opinion, by having discovered his inconstancy to Amelia; but the known character of the other presently cured him of this suspicion, for he was a perfect libertine with regard to women; that being indeed the principal blemish in his character, which otherwise might have deserved much commendation for good-nature, generosity, and friendship. But he carried this one to a most unpardonable height; and made no scruple of openly declaring, that if he ever liked a woman well enough to be uneasy on her account, he would cure himself, if he could, by enjoying her, whatever might be the consequence.

Booth could not therefore be persuaded that the

colonel would so highly resent in another a fault, of which he was himself most notoriously guilty. After much consideration, he could derive this behaviour from nothing better than a capriciousness in his friend's temper, from a kind of inconstancy of mind, which makes men grow weary of their friends, with no more reason than they often are of their mistresses. To say the truth, there are jilts in friendship, as well as in love; and by the behaviour of some men in both, one would almost imagine that they industriously sought to gain the affections of others, with a view only of making the parties miserable.

This was the consequence of the colonel's behaviour to Booth. Former calamities had afflicted him, but this almost distracted him; and the more so, as he was not able well to account for such conduct, nor to conceive the reason of it.

Amelia, at his return, presently perceived the disturbance in his mind, though he endeavoured with his utmost power to hide it; and he was at length prevailed upon by her intreaties to discover to her the cause of it; which she no sooner heard, than she applied as judicious a remedy to his disorderd spirits, as either of those great mental physician, Tully or Aristotle, could have thought of. She used many arguments to persude him that he was in an error; and had mistaken forgetfulness and carelessness for a designed neglect.

But as this physic was only eventually good, and as its efficacy depended on her being in the right, a point in which she was not apt to be too positive, she thought fit to add some consolation of a more certain and positive kind, 'Admit,' said she 'my dear, that Mr. James should prove 'the unaccountable person you have suspected, 'and should, without being able to allege any

'cause, withdraw his friendship from you (for 'surely the accident of burning his letter is too 'trifling and ridiculous to mention), why should 'this grieve you? the obligations he hath conferred 'on you, I allow, ought to make his misfortunes 'almost your own; but they should not, I think, 'make you see his faults so very sensibly, espe-'cially when, by one of the greatest faults in the 'world committed against yourself, he hath con-'siderably lessened all obligations; for sure, if the 'same person who hath contributed to my hap-'piness at one time, doth every thing in his 'power maliciously and wantonly to make me 'miserable at another, I am very little obliged to 'such a person. And let it be a comfort to my 'dear Billy, that, however other friends may 'prove false and fickle to him, he hath one friend, 'whom no inconstancy of her own, nor any 'change of his fortune, nor time, nor age, nor 'sickness, nor any accident can ever altar; but 'who will esteem, will love, and doat on him for 'ever.' So saying, she flung her snowy arms about his neck, and gave him a caress so tender, that it seemed almost to balance all the malice of his fate.

And, indeed, the behaviour of Amelia would have made him completely happy, in defiance of all adverse circumstances, had it not been for those bitter ingredients which he himself had thrown into his cup; and which prevented him from truly relishing his Amelia's sweetness, by cruelly reminding him how unworthy he was of this excellent creature.

Booth did not long remain in the dark as to the conduct of James, which, at first, appeared to him to be so great a mystery; for this very afternoon he received a letter from Miss Matthews, which unra-

velled the whole affair. By this letter, which was full of bitterness and upbraiding, he discovered that James was his rival with that lady, and was, indeed, the identical person who had sent the hundred pound note to Miss Matthews, when in the prison. He had reason to believe likewise, as well by the letter as by other circumstances, that James had hitherto been an unsuccessful lover; for the lady, though she had forfeited all title to virtue, had not yet so far forfeited all pretensions to delicacy, as to be, like the dirt in the street, indiffe-rently common to all. She distributed her favours only to those she liked, in which number that gentleman had not the happiness of being included.

When Booth had made this discovery, he was not so little versed in human nature, as any longer to hesitate at the true motive to the colonel's conduct; for he well knew how odious a sight a happy rival is to an unfortunate lover. I believe he was, in reality, glad to assign the cold treatment he had received from his friend, to a cause, which, however unjustifiable, is at the same time highly natural; and to acquit him of a levity, fickleness, and caprice, which he must have been unwillingly obliged to have seen in a much worse light.

He now resolved to take the first opportunity of accosting the colonel, and of coming to a perfect explanation upon the whole matter. He debated likewise with himself, whether he should not throw himself at Amelia's feet, and confess a crime to her, which he found so little hopes of concealing, and which he foresaw would occasion him so many difficulties and terrors to endeavour to conceal. Happy had it been for him, had he wisely pursued this step; since, in all probability, he would have received immediate forgiveness from the best of

women; but he had not sufficient resolution; or, to speak perhaps more truly, he had too much pride to confess his guilt, and preferred the danger of the highest inconveniencies to the certainty of being put to the blush.

CHAP. VI.

In which may appear, that Violence is sometimes done to the Name of Love.

WHEN that happy day came, in which unhallowed hands are forbidden to contaminate the shoulders of the unfortunante, Booth went early to the colonel's house, and being admitted to his presence, began with great freedom, though with great gentleness, to complain of his not having dealt with him with more openness. 'Why, my 'dear colonel,' said he, 'would you not acquaint 'me with that secret which this letter hath dis'closed?' James read the letter, at which his countenance changed more than once; and then, after a short silence, said, 'Mr. Booth, I have 'been to blame, I own it; and you upbraid me 'with justice. The true reason was, that I was 'ashamed of my own folly. D—n me, Booth, if 'I have not been a most consummate fool, a very 'dupe to this woman; and she hath a particular 'pleasure in making me so. I know what the 'impertinence of virtue is, and I can submit to it; 'but to be treated thus by a whore—You must 'forgive me, dear Booth, but your success was a 'kind of triumph over me, which I could not bear. 'I own, I have not the least reason to conceive

'any anger against you; and yet, curse me, if I 'should not have been less displeased at your ly-'ing with my own wife; nay, I could almost 'have parted with half my fortune to you more 'willingly, than have suffered you to receive that 'trifle of my money, which you received at her 'hands. However, I ask your pardon, and I 'promise you, I will never more think of you with 'the least ill-will, on the account of this woman; 'but as for her, d—n me, if I do not enjoy her by 'some means or other, whatever it costs me; for 'I am already above two hundred pounds out of 'pocket, without having scarce had a smile in 'return.'

Booth expressed much astonishment at this declaration; he said, he could not conceive how it was possible to have such an affection for a woman, who did not shew the least inclination to return it. James gave her a hearty curse, and said, 'Pox of 'her inclination; I want only the possession of her 'person; and that you will allow is a very fine one. 'But, besides my passion for her, she hath now 'piqued my pride; for how can a man of my for-'tune brook being refused by a whore?' 'Since 'you are so set on the business,' cries Booth, 'you 'will excuse my saying so; I fancy you had better 'change your method of applying to her; for, as 'she is, perhaps, the vainest woman upon earth, 'your bounty may probably do you little service; 'nay, may rather actually disoblige her. Vanity is 'plainly her predominant passion, and, if you will 'administer to that, it will infallibly throw her into 'your arms. To this I attribute my own unfortu-'nate success. Whilst she relieved my wants and 'distresses, she was daily feeding her own vanity; 'whereas, as every gift of yours asserted your su-'periority, it rather offended than pleased her. In-

'deed, women generally love to be of the obliging 'side; and if we examine their favourites, we shall 'find them to be much oftener such as they have 'conferred obligations on, than such as they have 'received them from.'

There was something in this speech which pleased the colonel; and he said, with a smile, 'I 'don't know how it is, Will; but you know women 'better than I.' 'Perhaps, colonel,' answered Booth, 'I have studied their minds more.' 'I 'don't, however, much envy you your knowledge,' replied the other; 'for I never think their minds 'worth considering. However, I hope I shall pro-'fit a little by your experience with Miss Mat-'thews. Damnation seize the proud insolent har-'lot! the devil take me, if I don't love her more 'than I ever loved a woman!'

The rest of their conversation turned on Booth's affairs. The colonel again reassumed the part of a friend, gave him the remainder of the money, and promised to take the first opportunity of laying his memorial before a great man.

Booth was greatly overjoyed at this success. Nothing now lay on his mind, but to conceal his frailty from Amelia, to whom he was afraid Miss Matthews, in the rage of her resentment, would communicate it. This apprehension made him stay almost constantly at home; and he trembled at every knock at the door. His fear, moreover, betrayed him into a meanness which he would have heartily despised on any other occasion. This was to order the maid to deliver him any letter directed to Amelia; at the same time strictly charging her not to acquaint her mistress with her having received any such orders.

A servant of any acuteness would have formed strange conjectures from such an injunction; but

this poor girl was of perfect simplicity; so great indeed was her simplicity, that had not Amelia been void of all suspicion of her husband, the maid would have soon after betrayed her master.

One afternoon, while they were drinking tea, little Betty, so was the maid called, came into the room; and calling her master forth, delivered him a card which was directed to Amelia. Booth having read the card, on his return into the room, chid the girl for calling him, saying, 'If you can 'read, child, you must see it was directed to your 'mistress.'—To this the girl answered pertly enough, 'I am sure, Sir, you ordered me to bring 'every letter first to you.' This hint, with many women, would have been sufficient to have blown up the whole affair; but Amelia who heard what the girl said, through the medium of love and confidence, saw the matter in a much better light than it deserved; and looking tenderly on her husband, said, 'Indeed, my love, I must blame 'you for a conduct, which, perhaps, I ought rather to praise, as it proceeds only from the extreme tenderness of your affection. But why will 'you endeavour to keep any secrets from me? believe me, for my own sake, you ought not; for, 'as you cannot hide the consequences, you make 'me always suspect ten times worse than the reality. While I have you and my children well 'before my eyes, I am capable of facing any news 'which can arrive; for what ill news can come '(unless indeed it concerns my little babe in the 'country) which doth not relate to the badness of 'our circumstances? and those, I thank Heaven, 'we have now a fair prospect of retrieving. Besides, dear Billy, though my understanding be 'much inferior to yours, I have sometimes had the 'happiness of luckily hitting on some argument

'which hath afforded you comfort. This you 'know, my dear, was the case with regard to Co-'lonel James, whom I persuaded you to think you 'had mistaken, and you see the event proved me 'in the right.' So happily, both for herself and Mr. Booth, did the excellence of this good woman's disposition deceive her, and force her to see every thing in the most advantageous light to her husband.

The card being now inspected, was found to contain the compliments of Mrs. James to Mrs. Booth, with an account of her being arrived in town, and having brought with her a very great cold. Amelia was overjoyed at the news of her arrival; and having drest herself in the utmost hurry, left her children to the care of her husband, and ran away to pay her respects to her friend, whom she loved with a most sincere affection. But how was she disappointed, when, eager with the utmost impatience, and exulting with the thoughts of presently seeing her beloved friend, she was answered at the door that the lady was not at home! nor could she, upon telling her name, obtain any admission. This, considering the account she had received of the lady's cold, greatly surprised her; and she returned home very much vexed at her disappointment.

Amelia, who had no suspicion that Mrs. James was really at home, and, as the phrase is, was denied, would have made a second visit the next morning, had she not been prevented by a cold, which she herself now got, and which was attended with a slight fever. This confined her several days to her house, during which Booth officiated as her nurse, and never stirred from her.

In all this time she heard not a word from Mrs. James, which gave her some uneasiness, but more

astonishment. The tenth day, when she was perfectly recovered, about nine in the evening, when she and her husband were just going to supper, she heard a most violent thundering at the door, and presently after a rustling of silk upon the staircase, at the same time a female voice cried out pretty loud—' Bless me ! what am I to climb up another ' pair of stairs ?' upon which Amelia, who well knew the voice, presently ran to the door, and ushered in Mrs. James most splendidly dressed ; who put on as formal a countenance, and made as formal a courtesy to her old friend, as if she had been her very distant acquaintance.

Poor Amelia, who was going to rush into her friend's arms, was struck motionless by this behaviour ; but recollecting her spirits, as she had an excellent presence of mind, she presently understood what the lady meant, and sesolved to treat her in her own way. Down therefore the company sat, and silence prevailed for some time, during which Mrs. James surveyed the room with more attention than she would have bestowed on one much finer. At length the conversation began, in which the weather and the diversions of the town were well canvassed. Amelia, who was a woman of great humour, performed her part to admiration ; so that a bystander would have doubted, in every other article than dress, which of the two was the most accomplished fine lady.

After a visit of twenty minutes, during which not a word of any former occurrences was mentioned, nor indeed any subject of discourse started, except only those two above-mentioned, Mrs. James rose from her chair, and retired in the same formal manner in which she dad appproached. We will pursue her for the sake of the contrast, during

the rest of the evening. She went from Amelia directly to a rout, where she spent two hours in a crowd of company, talked again and again over the diversions and news of the town, played two rubbers at whist, and then retired to her own apartment, where having passed another hour in undressing herself, she went to her own bed.

Booth and his wife, the moment their companion was gone, sat down to supper on a piece of cold meat, the remains of their dinner. After which, over a pint of wine, they entertained themselves for a while with the ridiculous behaviour of their visitant. But Amelia declaring she rather saw her as the object of pity than anger, turned the discourse to pleasanter topics. The little actions of their children, the former scenes and future prospects of their life, furnished them with many pleasant ideas; and the contemplation of Amelia's recovery threw Booth into raptures. At length they retired, happy in each other.

It is possible some readers may be no less surprised at the behaviour of Mrs. James, than was Amelia herself, since they may have perhaps received so favourable an impression of that lady from the account given of her by Mr. Booth, that her prsent demeanour may seem unnatural and inconsistent with her former character. But they will be pleased to consider the great alteration in her circumstances, from a state of dependency on a brother, who was himself no better than a soldier of fortune, to that of being wife to a man of a very large estate, and considerable rank in life. And what was her present behaviour more than that of a fine lady, who considered form and show as essential ingredients of human happiness, and imagined all friendship to consist in ceremony, cour-

tesies, messages, and visits? in which opinion, she hath the honour to think with much the larger part of one sex, and no small number of the other.

CHAP. VII.

Containing a very extraordinary and pleasing Incident.

THE next evening, Booth and Amelia went to walk in the Park with their children. They were now on the verge of the Parade, and Booth was describing to his wife the several buildings round it; when, on a sudden, Amelia, missing her little boy, cried out, 'Where's little Billy?' Upon which Booth casting his eyes over the grass, saw a foot-soldier shaking the boy at a little distance. At this sight, without making any answer to his wife, he leapt over the rails, and running directly up to the fellow, who had a firelock with a bayonet fixed in his hand, he seized him by the collar, and tript up his heels, and, at the same time, wrested his arms from him. A sergeant upon duty seeing the affray at some distance, ran presently up, and being told what had happened, gave the sentinel a hearty curse, and told him he deserved to be hanged. A by-stander gave this information; for Booth was returned with his little boy to meet Amelia, who staggered towards him as fast as she could, all pale and breathless, and scarce able to support her tottering limbs. The sergeant now came up to Booth, to make an apology for the behaviour of the soldier, when, of a sudden, he turned almost

as pale as Amelia herself. He stood silent whilst Booth was employed in comforting and recovering his wife; and then addressing himself to him, said, 'Bless me! lieutenant, could I imagine it had been 'your honour; and was it my little master that 'the rascal used so—I am glad I did not know it, 'for I should certainly have run my halbert into 'him.'

Booth presently recognised his old faithful servant Atkinson, and gave him a hearty greeting; saying, He was very glad to see him in his present situation. 'Whatever I am,' answered the sergeant, 'I shall always think I owe it to your honour.' Then taking the little boy by the hand—he cried, 'What a vast fine young gentleman master is 'grown!' and cursing the soldier's inhumanity, swore heartily he would make him pay for it.

As Amelia was much disordered with her fright, she did not recollect her foster-brother till he was introduced to her by Booth; but she no sooner knew him, than she bestowed a most obliging smile on him; and calling him by the name of honest Joe, said, she was heartily glad to see him in England.——'See, my dear,' cries Booth, 'what pre'ferment your old friend is come to. You would 'scarce know him, I believe, in his present state 'of finery.' 'I am very well pleased to see it,' answered Amelia, 'and I wish him joy of being made 'an officer with all my heart.' In fact, from what Mr. Booth said, joined to the sergeant's laced coat, she believed that he had obtained a commission. So weak and absurd is human vanity, that this mistake of Amelia's possibly put poor Atkinson out of countenance; for he looked at this instant more silly than he had ever done in his life; and making her a most respectful bow, muttered some-

thing about obligations, in a scarce articulate or intelligible manner.

The sergeant had, indeed, among many other qualities, that modesty which a Latin author honours by the name of ingenuous: Nature had given him this, notwithstanding the meanness of his birth; and six years conversation in the army had not taken it away. To say the truth, he was a noble fellow; and Amelia, by supposing he had a commission in the guards, had been guilty of no affront to that honourable body.

Booth had a real affection for Atkinson, though, in fact, he knew not half his merit. He acquainted him with his lodgings, where he earnestly desired to see him.

Amelia, who was far from being recovered from the terrors into which the seeing her husband engaged with the soldier had thrown her, desired to go home: nor was she well able to walk without some assistance. While she supported herself, therefore, on her husband's arm, she told Atkinson, she should be obliged to him, if he would take care of the children. He readily accepted the office; but, upon offering his hand to Miss, she refused, and burst into tears. Upon which the tender mother resigned Booth to her children, and put herself under the sergeant's protection: who conducted her safe home, though she often declared she feared she should drop down by the way. The fear of which so affected the sergeant (for besides the honour which he himself had for the lady, he knew how tenderly his friend loved her) that he was unable to speak; and had not his nerves been so strongly braced that nothing could shake them, he had enough in his mind to have set him a trembling equally with the lady.

When they arrived at the lodgings, the mistress

of the house opened the door, who, seeing Amelia's condition, threw open the parlour, and begged her to walk in; upon which she immediately flung herself into a chair, and all present thought she would have fainted away—However, she escaped that misery, and having drank a glass of water with a little white wine mixed in it, she began, in a little time, to regain her complexion; and, at length, assured Booth that she was perfectly recovered, but declared she had never undergone so much, and earnestly begged him never to be so rash for the future. She then called her little boy, and gently chid him, saying, 'You must never do so more, 'Billy; you see what mischief you might have 'brought upon your father; and what you have 'made me suffer.' 'La! mamma,' said the child, 'what harm did I do? I did not know that people 'might not walk in the green fields in London. 'I am sure, if I did a fault, the man punished me 'enough for it; for he pinched me almost through 'my slender arm.' He then bared his little arm, which was greatly discoloured by the injury it had received—Booth uttered a most dreadful execration at this sight; and the sergeant, who was now present, did the like.

Atkinson now returned to his guard, and went directly to the officer to acquaint him with the soldier's inhumanity; but he, who was about fifteen years of age, gave the sergeant a great curse, and said the soldier had done very well; for that idle boys ought to be corrected. This, however, did not satisfy poor Atkinson, who, the next day, as soon as the guard was relieved, beat the fellow most unmercifully, and told him he would remember him as long as he stayed in the regiment.

Thus ended this trifling adventure, which some

readers will, perhaps, be pleased with seeing related at full length. None, I think, can fail drawing one observation from it; namely, how capable the most insignificant accident is of disturbing human happiness, and of producing the most unexpected and dreadful events. A reflection which may serve so many moral and religious uses.

This accident produced the first acquaintance between the mistress of the house and her lodgers; for hitherto they had scarce enchanged a word together. But the great concern which the good woman had shewn on Amelia's account at this time, was not likely to pass unobserved or unthanked either by the huband or wife. Amelia, therefore, as soon as she was able to go up stairs, invited Mrs. Ellison (for that was her name) to her apartment, and desired the favour of her to stay to supper. She readily complied; and they past a very agreeable evening together, in which the two women seemed to have conceived a most extraordinary liking to each other.

Though beauty in general doth not grearly recommend one woman to another, as it is too apt to create envy; yet, in cases where this passion doth not interfere, a fine woman is often a pleasing object even to some of her own sex; especially when her beauty is attended with a certain air of affability, as was that of Amelia in the highest degree. She was, indeed, a most charming woman; and I know not whether the little scar on her nose did not rather add to, than diminish her beauty.

Mrs. Fllison, therefore, was as much charmed with the loveliness of her fair lodger, as with all her other engaging qualities. She was, indeed, so taken with Amelia's beauty, that she could not refrain from crying out in a kind of transport of

admiration, 'Upon my word, Captain, Booth you
'are the happiest man in the world! Your lady is
'so extremely handsome, that one cannot look at
'her without pleasure.'

This good woman herself had none of these attractive charms to the eye. Her person was short, and immoderately fat; her features were none of the most regular; and her complexion (if indeed she ever had a good one) had considerably suffered by time.

Her good humour and complaisance, however, were highly pleasing to Amelia. Nay, why should we conceal the secret satisfaction which that lady felt from the compliments paid to her person? since such of my readers as like her best, will not be sorry to find that she was a woman.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing various Matters.

A FORTNIGHT had now passed, since Booth had seen or heard from the colonel; which did not a little surprise him, as they had parted so good friends, and as he had so cordially undertaken his cause concerning the memorial, on which all his hopes depended.

The uneasiness which this gave him, farther increased on finding that his friend refused to see him; for he had paid the colonel a vist at nine in the morning, and was told he was not stirring; and at his return back an hour afterwards, the servant said his master was gone out; of which Booth was certain of the falsehood; for he had,

during that whole hour, walked backwards and forwards within sight of the colonel's door, and must have seen him, if he had gone out within that time.

The good colonel, however, did not long suffer his friend to continue in the deplorable state of anxiety; for the very next morning Booth received his memorial enclosed in a letter, acquainting him that Mr. James had mentioned his affair to the person he proposed; but that the great man had so many engagements on his hands, that it was impossible for him to make any further promises at this time.

The cold and distant style of this letter, and, indeed, the whole behaviour of James, so different from what it had been formerly, had something so mysterious in it, that it greatly puzzled and perplexed poor Booth; and it was so long before he was able to solve it, that the reader's curiosity will, perhaps, be obliged to us for not leaving him so long in the dark as to this matter. The true reason, then, of the colonel's conduct was this: His unbounded generosity, together with the unbounded extravagance, and consequently the great necessity of Miss Matthews, had, at length, overcome the cruelty of that lady, with whom he likewise had luckily no rival. Above all, the desire of being revenged on Booth, with whom she was, to the highest degree, enraged, had, perhaps, contributed not a little to his success; for she had no sooner condescended to a familiarity with her new lover, and discovered that Captain James, of whom she had heard so much from Booth, was no other than the identical colonel, than she employed every art of which she was mistress, to make an utter breach of friendship between these two. For this purpose, she did not scruple to insinuate, that the

colonel was not at all obliged to the character given of him by his friend; and to the account of this latter she placed most of the cruelty which she had shewn to the former.

Had the colonel made a proper use of his reason, and fairly examined the probability of the fact, he could scarce have been imposed upon to believe a matter so inconsistent with all he knew of Booth, and in which that gentleman must have sinned against all the laws of honour without any visible temptation. But in solemn fact, the colonel was so intoxicated with his love, that it was in the power of his mistress to have persuaded him of any thing; besides, he had an interest in giving her credit; for he was not a little pleased with finding a reason for hating the man, whom he could not help hating without any reason, at least, without any which he durst fairly assign even to himself. Henceforth, therefore, he abandoned all friendship for Booth, and was more inclined to put him out of the world, than to endeavour any longer at supporting him in it.

Booth communicated this letter to his wife, who endeavoured, as usual, to the utmost of her power, to console him under one of the greatest afflictions which, I think, can befal a man, namely, the unkindness of a friend; but he had luckily at the same time the greatest blessing in his possession, the kindness of a faithful and beloved wife. A blessing however, which, though it compensates most of the evils of life, rather serves to aggravate the misfortune of dirtressed circumstances, from the consideration of the share which she is to bear in them.

This afternoon Amelia received a second visit from Mrs. Ellison, who acquainted her that she had a present of a ticket for the oratorio, which

would carry two persons into the gallery; and therefore begged the favour of her company thither.

Amelia, with many thanks, acknowledged the civility of Mrs. Ellison, but declined accepting her offer; upon which Booth very strenuously insisted on her going, and said to her, 'My dear, 'if you knew the satisfaction I have in any of 'your pleasures, I am convinced you would not 'refuse the favour Mrs. Ellison is so kind to offer 'you; for as you are a lover of music, you, who 'have never been at an oratorio, cannot conceive 'how you will be delighted.'——'I well know 'your goodness, my dear,' answered Amelia, 'but 'I cannot think of leaving my children without 'some person more proper to take care of them 'than this poor girl.' Mrs. Ellison removed this objection by offering her own servant, a very discreet matron, to attend them; but notwithstanding this, and all she could say, with the assistance of Booth, and of the children themselves, Amelia still persisted in her refusal; and the mistress of the house, who knew how far good breeding allows persons to be pressing on these occasions, took her leave.

She was no sooner departed, than Amelia, looking tenderly on her husband, said, 'How can you, 'my dear creature, think that music hath any 'charms for me at this time—Or indeed, do you 'believe that I am capable of any sensation worthy 'the name of pleasure, when neither you nor my 'children are present, or bear any part of it?

An officer of the regiment to which Booth had formerly belonged, hearing from Atkinson where he lodged, now came to pay him a visit. He told him that several of their old acquaintance were to meet the next Wednesday at a tavern, and very

strongly pressed him to be one of the company. Booth was, in truth, what was called a hearty fellow, and loved now and then to take a cheerful glass with his friends; but he excused himself at this time. His friend declared he would take no denial, and he growing very importunate, Amelia at length seconded him. Upon this Booth answered, 'Well, my dear, since you desire me, I will comply, but on one condition, that you go at the same time to the oratorio.' Amelia thought this request reasonable enough, and gave her consent; of which Mrs. Ellison presently received the news, and with great satisfaction.

It may, perhaps, be asked, Why Booth could go to the tavern, and not to the oratoria with his wife?—In truth, then, the tavern was within hallowed ground, that is to say, in the verge of the court; for, of five officers that were to meet there, three, besides Booth, were confiued to that air, which had been always found extremely wholesome to a broken military constitution. And here if the good reader will pardon the pun, he will scarce be offended at the observation; since, how is it possible that, without running in debt, any person should maintain the dress and appearance of a gentleman, whose income is not half so good as that of a porter? It is true, that this allowance, small as it is, is a great expense to the public; but if several more unnecessary charges were spared, the public might, perhaps, bear a little increase of this, without much feeling it. They would not, I am sure, have equal reason to complain at contributing to the maintenance of a set of brave fellows, who, at the hazard of their health, their limbs, and their lives, have maintained the safety and honour of their country, as when they find themselves taxed to the support of

a set of drones, who have not the least merit or claim to their favour; and who, without contributing in any manner to the good of the hive, live luxuriously on the labours of the industrious bee.

CHAP. IX.

In which Amelia, with her Friend, goes to the Oratorio.

NOTHING happened between the Monday and the Wednesday, worthy a place in this history. Upon the evening of the latter, the two ladies went to the oratorio, and were there time enough to get a first row in the gallery. Indeed, there was only one person in the house when they came; for Amelia's inclinations, when she gave a loose to them, were pretty eager for this diversion, she being a great lover of music, and particularly of Mr. Handel's compositions. Mrs. Ellison was, I suppose, a great lover likewise of music, for she was the more impatient of the two; which was rather the more extraordinary, as these entertainments were not such novelties to her as they were to poor Amelia.

Though our ladies arrived full two hours before they saw the back of Mr. Handel; yet this time of expectation did not hang extremely heavy on their hands; for, besides their own chat, they had the company of the gentleman whom they found at their first arrival in the gallery, and who, though plainly, or rather roughly dressed, very luckily for the women, happened to be not only well bred, but

a person of very lively conversation. The gentleman, on his part, seemed highly charmed with Amelia, and in fact was so; for, though he restrained himself entirely within the rules of good breeding, yet was he in the highest degree officious to catch at every opportunity of shewing his respect, and doing her little services. He procured her a book and wax candle, and held the candle for her himself during the whole entertainment.

At the end of the oratorio, he declared he would not leave the ladies till he had seen them safe into their chairs or coach; and at the same time very earnestly entreated that he might have the honour of waiting on them. Upon which Mrs. Ellison, who was a very good-humoured woman, answered, 'Ay sure, Sir, if you please; you have been very 'obliging to us; and a dish of tea shall be at your 'service at any time;' and then told him where she lived.

The ladies were no sooner seated in their hackney-coach, than Mrs. Ellison burst into a loud laughter, and cried, 'I'll be hanged, Madam, if you have 'not made a conquest to-night; and, what is very 'pleasant, I believe the poor gentleman takes you 'for a single lady.' 'Nay,' answered Amelia very gravely, 'I protest I began to think at last he was 'rather too particular, though he did not venture 'at a word that I could be offended at; but if you 'fancy any such thing, I am sorry you invited him 'to drink tea.' 'Why so?' replied Mrs. Ellison, 'Are you angry with a man for liking you? if you 'are, you will be angry with almost every man 'that sees you. If I was a man myself I declare 'I should be in the number of your admirers. Poor 'gentleman, I pity him heartily; he little knows 'that you have not a heart to dispose of. For my 'own part, I should not be surprised at seeing a

'serious proposal of marriage; for I am convinced 'he is a man of fortune, not only by the politeness 'of his address, but by the fineness of his linen, 'and that valuable diamond ring on his finger. But 'you will see more of him when he comes to tea.' 'Indeed I shall not,' answered Amelia, 'though I 'believe you only rally me; I hope you have a 'better opinion of me, than to think I would go 'willingly into the company of a man who had an 'improper liking for me.' Mrs. Ellison, who was one of the gayest women in the world, repeated the words, improper liking, with a laugh; and cried, 'My dear Mrs. Booth, believe me, you are too 'handsome and too good-humoured for a prude. 'How can you affect being offended at what I am 'convinced is the greatest pleasure of womankind, 'and chiefly, I believe, of us virtuous women? 'for, I assure you, notwithstanding my gaiety, I 'am as virtuous as any prude in Europe.' 'Far be 'it from me, Madam,' said Amelia, 'to suspect 'the contrary of abundance of women who indulge 'themselves in much greater freedoms than I 'should take, or have any pleasure in taking; for 'I solemnly protest, if I know my own heart, the 'liking of all men, but of one, is a matter quite 'indifferent to me, or rather would be highly dis-'agreeable.'

This discourse brought them home, where Amelia, finding her children asleep, and her husband not returned, invited her companion to partake of her homely fare, and down they sat to supper together. The clock struck twelve; and no news being arrived of Booth, Mrs. Ellison began to express some astonishment at his stay, whence she launched into a general reflection on husbands, and soon past to some particular invectives on her own. 'Ah, my dear Madam,' says she, 'I know the

'present state of your mind, by what I have my-'self often felt formerly. I am no stranger to the 'melancholy tone of a midnight clock. It was my 'misfortune to drag on a heavy chain above fifteen 'years with a sottish yoke-fellow. But how can I 'wonder at my fate; since I see even your supe-'rior charms cannot confine a husband from the 'bewitching pleasures of a bottle.' 'Indeed, Ma-'dam,' says Amelia, 'I have no reason to com-'plain; Mr. Booth is one of the soberest of men; 'but now and then to spend a late hour with his 'friend, is, I think, highly excusable.' 'O, no 'doubt!' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'if he can excuse 'himself; but if I was a man—' Here Booth came in and interrupted the discourse. Amelia's eyes flashed with joy the moment he appeared; and he discovered no less pleasure in seeing her. His spirits were indeed a little elevated with wine, so as to heighten his good-humour, without in the least disordering his understanding, and made him such delightful company, that though it was past one in the morning, neither his wife nor Mrs. Ellison thought of their beds during a whole hour.

Early the next morning the sergeant came to Mr. Booth's lodgings, and with a melancholy countenance acquainted him, that he had been the night before at an alehouse, where he heard one Mr. Murphy, an attorney, declare, that he would get a warrant backed against one Captain Booth at the next board of green-cloth. 'I hope, Sir,' said he, 'your honour will pardon me; but by what he 'said, I was afraid he meant your honour; and 'therefore I thought it my duty to tell you; for I 'knew the same thing happen to a gentleman here 'the other day.'

Booth gave Mr. Atkinson many thanks for his information. 'I doubt not,' said he, 'but I am

'the person meant; for it would be foolish in me 'to deny that I am liable to apprehensions of that 'sort.' 'I hope, Sir,' said the sergeant, 'your ho-'nour will soon have reason to fear no man living: 'but in the mean time, if any accident should 'happen, my bail is at your service as far as it 'will go; and I am a housekeeper, and can swear 'myself worth one hundred pounds.' Which hearty and friendly declaration received all those acknowledgements from Booth, which it really deserved.

The poor gentleman was greatly alarmed at this news; but he was altogether as much surprised at Murphy's being the attorney employed against him, as all his debts, except only to Captain James, arose in the country, where he did not know that Mr. Murphy had any acquaintance. However, he made no doubt that he was the person intended, and resolved to remain a close prisoner in his own lodgings, till he saw the event of a proposal which had been made him the evening before at the tavern, where an honest gentleman, who had a post under the government, and who was one of the company, had promised to serve him with the secretary at war, telling him, that he made no doubt of procuring him whole pay in a regiment abroad, which in his present circumstances was very highly worth his acceptance; when, indeed, that and a gaol seemed to be the only alternatives that offered themselves to his choice.

Mr. Booth and his lady spent that afternoon with Mrs. Ellison—an incident which we should scarce have mentioned, had it not been that Amelia gave, on this occasion, an instance of that prudence which should never be off its guard in married women of delicacy; for, before she would consent to drink tea with Mrs. Ellison, she made conditions, that

the gentleman who had met them at the oratorio should not be let in. Indeed, this circumspection proved unnecessary in the present instance; for no such visitor ever came; a circumstance which gave great content to Amelia; for that lady had been a little uneasy at the raillery of Mrs. Ellison, and had upon reflection, magnified every little compliment made her, and every little civility shewn her by the unknown gentleman, far beyond the truth. These imaginations now all subsided again; and she imputed all that Mrs. Ellison had said, either to raillery or mistake.

A young lady made a fourth with them at whist, and likewise stayed the whole evening. Her name was Bennet. She was about the age of five-and-twenty; but sickness had given her an older look, and had a good deal diminished her beauty; of which, young as she was, she plainly appeared to have only the remains in her present possession.—She was in one particular the very reverse of Mrs. Ellison, being altogether as remarkably grave as the other was gay. This gravity was not, however, attended with any sourness of temper; on the contrary, she had much sweetness in her countenance, and was perfectly well bred. In short, Amelia imputed her grave deportment to her ill health, and began to entertain a compassion for her, which in good minds, that is to say, in minds capable of compassion, is certain to introduce some little degree of love or friendship.

Amelia was, in short, so pleased with the conversation of this lady, that, though a woman of no impertinent curiosity, she could not help taking the first opportunity of inquiring who she was. Mrs. Ellison said, that she was an unhappy lady, who had married a young clergyman for love, who, dying of a consumption, had left her a widow in very

indifferent circumstances. This account made Amelia still pity her more, and consequently added to the liking which she had already conceived for her. Amelia, therefore, desired Mrs. Ellison to bring her acquainted with Mrs. Bennet, and said she would go any day with her to make that lady a visit.— 'There need be no ceremony,' cried Mrs. Ellison, 'she is a woman of no form; and as I saw plainly 'she was extremely pleased with Mrs. Booth, I am 'convinced I can bring her to drink tea with you 'any afternoon you please.'

The two next days Booth continued at home, highly to the satisfaction of his Amelia, who really knew no happiness out of his company, nor scarce any misery in it. She had, indeed, at all times so much of his company when in his power, that she had no occasion to assign any particular reason for his staying with her, and consequently it could give her no cause of suspicion. The Saturday, one of her children was a little disordered with a feverish complaint, which confined her to her room, and prevented her drinking tea in the afternoon with her husband in Mrs. Ellison's apartment, where a noble lord, a cousin of Mrs. Ellison, happened to be present; for though that lady was reduced in her circumstances, and obliged to let out part of her house in lodgings, she was born of a good family, and had some considerable relations.

His lordship was not himself in any office of state; but his fortune gave him great authority with those who were. Mrs. Ellison, therefore, very bluntly took an opportunity of recommending Booth to his consideration. She took the first hint from my lord's calling the gentleman Captain—To which she answered—' Ay, I wish your lordship would 'make him so. It would be but an act of justice, 'and I know it is in your power to do much great-

'er things.' She then mentioned Booth's services, and the wounds he had received at the siege, of which she had heard a faithful account from Amelia. —Booth blushed, and was as silent as a young virgin at the hearing her own praises. His lordship answered, 'Cousin Ellison, you know you may 'command my interest; nay, I shall have a pleasure in serving one of Mr. Booth's character: for 'my part, I think merit in all capacities ought to 'be encouraged; but I know the ministry are 'greatly pestered with solicitations at this time.— 'However, Mr. Booth may be assured I will take 'the first opportunity; and, in the mean time, I 'shall be glad of seeing him any morning he pleases.' For all these declarations, Booth was not wanting in acknowledgements to the generous peer, any more than he was in secret gratitude to the lady who had shewn so friendly and uncommon a zeal in his favour.

The reader, when he knows the character of this nobleman, may, perhaps, conclude that his seeing Booth alone was a lucky circumstance; for he was so passionate an admirer of women, that he could scarce have escaped the attraction of Amelia's beauty. And few men, as I have observed, have such disinterested generosity as to serve a husband the better, because they are in love with his wife, unless she will condescend to pay a price beyond the reach of a virtuous woman.

AMELIA.

BOOK V.

CHAP. I.

In which the Reader will meet with an old Acquaintance.

BOOTH's affairs put on a better aspect than they had ever worn before, and he was willing to make use of the opportunity of one day in seven to taste the fresh air.

At nine in the morning he went to pay a visit to his old friend Colonel James, resolving, if possible, to have a full explanation of that behaviour which appeared to him so mysterious; but the colonel was as inaccessible as the best defended fortress; and it was as impossible for Booth to pass beyond his entry, as the Spaniards found it to take Gibraltar. He received the usual answers; first, that the colonel was not stirring, and an hour after that he was gone out. All that he got by asking further questions, was only to receive still ruder and ruder answers; by which, if he had been very sagacious, he might have been satisfied how little worth his while it was to desire to go in; for the porter at a great man's door is a kind of thermometer, by which you may discover the

warmth or coldness of his master's friendship. Nay, in the highest stations of all, as the great man himself hath his different kinds of salutation, from an hearty embrace with a kiss, and my dear lord, or dear Sir Charles, down to, well Mr. ——— what would you have me do? so the porter, to some bows with respect, to others with a smile, to some he bows more, to others less low, to others not at all. Some he just lets in, and others he just shuts out. And in all this they so well correspond, that one would be inclined to think that the great man and his porter had compared their lists together, and, like two actors concerned to act different parts in the same scene, had rehearsed their parts privately together before they ventured to perform in public.

Though Booth did not, perhaps, see the whole matter in this just light, for that in reality it is; yet he was discerning enough to conclude, from the behaviour of the servant, especially when he considered that of the master likewise, that he had entirely lost the friendship of James; and this conviction gave him a concern, that not only the flattering prospect of his lordship's favour was not able to compensate; but which even obliterated, and made him for a while forget, the situation in which he had left his Amelia: and he wandered about almost two hours, scarce knowing where he went, till at last he dropt into a coffee-house near St. James's, where he sat himself down.

He had scarce drank his dish of coffee, before he heard a young officer of the guards cry to another, 'Od, d—n me Jack, here he comes—here's old 'honour and dignity, faith.' Upon which, he saw a chair open, and out issued a most erect and stately figure indeed, with a vast perriwig on his head, and a vast hat under his arm. This august person-

age, having entered the room, walked directly up to the upper end, where having paid his respects to all present of any note, to each according to seniority, he at last cast his eyes on Booth, and very civilly, though somewhat coldly, asked him how he did.

Booth, who had long recognized the features of his old acquaintance, Major Bath, returned the compliment with a very low bow; but did not venture to make the first advance to familiarity, as he was truly possessed of that quality which the Greeks considered in the highest light of honour, and which we term modesty; though indeed, neither ours nor the Latin language hath any word adequate to the idea of the original.

The colonel, after having discharged himself of two or three articles of news, and made his comments upon them, when the next chair to him became vacant, called upon Booth to fill it. He then asked him several questions relating to his affairs; and, when he heard he was out of the army, advised him earnestly to use all means to get in again, saying, that he was a pretty lad, and they must not lose him.

Booth told him in a whisper, that he had a great deal to say to him on that subject, if they were in a more private place; upon this, the colonel proposed a walk in the Park, which the other readily accepted.

During their walk, Booth opened his heart, and among other matters acquainted Colonel Bath, that he feared he had lost the friendship of Colonel James; 'though I am not,' said he, 'conscious of 'having done the least thing to deserve it.'

Bath answered, 'You are certainly mistaken, 'Mr. Booth. I have indeed scarce seen my bro'ther since my coming to town; for I have been

'here but two days; however, I am convinced he 'is a man of too nice honour to do any thing inconsistent with the true dignity of a gentleman.' Booth answered, 'He was far from accusing him of any 'thing dishonourable.'—'D—n me,' said Bath, 'if there is a man alive can, or dare accuse him: 'if you have the least reason to take any thing ill 'why don't you go to him? you are a gentleman, 'and his rank doth not protect him from giving 'you satisfaction.' 'The affair is not of any such 'kind,' says Booth; 'I have great obligations to the 'colonel, and have more reason to lament than 'complain; and if I could but see him, I am convinced I should have no cause for either; but I 'cannot get within his house; it was but an hour 'ago, a servant of his turned me rudely from the 'door.' 'Did a servant of my brother use you 'rudely?' said the colonel, with the utmost gravity. 'I do not know, Sir, in what light you see such 'things; but to me, the affront of a servant is the 'affront of the master; and if he doth not immediately punish it, by all the dignity of a man, I 'would see the master's nose between my fingers.' Booth offered to explain, but to no purpose; the colonel was got into his stilts; and it was impossible to take him down, nay, it was as much as Booth could possibly do to part with him without an actual quarrel; nor would he, perhaps, have been able to have accomplished it, had not the colonel by accident turned at last to take Booth's side of the question; and before they separated, he swore many oaths that James should give him proper satisfaction.

Such was the end of this present interview, so little to the content of Booth, that he was heartily concerned he had ever mentioned a syllable of the matter to his honourable friend.

CHAP. II.

In which Booth pays a Visit to the noble Lord.

WHEN that day of the week returned, in which Mr. Booth chose to walk abroad, he went to wait on the noble peer, according to his kind invitation.

Booth now found a very different reception with this great man's porter, from what he had met with at his friend the colonel's. He no sooner told his name, than the porter with a bow told him his lordship was at home; the door immediately flew wide open; and he was conducted to an antichamber, where a servant told him he would acquaint his lordship with his arrival. Nor did he wait many minutes before the same servant returned, and ushered him to his lordship's apartment.

He found my lord alone, and was received by him in the most courteous manner imaginable.—After the first ceremonials were over, his lordship began in the following words: 'Mr. Booth, I do 'assure you, you are very much obliged to my cou'sin Ellison. She hath given you such a character 'that I shall have a pleasure in doing any thing in 'my power to serve you.—But it will be very 'difficult, I am afraid, to get you a rank at home. 'In the West-Indies, perhaps, or in some regiment 'abroad, it may be more easy; and when I consi'der your reputation as a soldier, I make no doubt 'of your readiness to go to any place where the 'service of your country shall call you.' Booth answered, 'That he was highly obliged to his lord'ship, and assured him he would with great cheer'fulness attend his duty in any part of the world. 'The only thing grievous in the exchange of coun-

'tries,' said he, 'in my opinion, is to leave those 'I love behind me, and I am sure, I shall never 'have a second trial equal to my first. It was very 'hard, my lord, to leave a young wife big with 'her first child, and so affected with my absence, 'that I had the utmost reason to despair of ever 'seeing her more. After such a demonstration of 'my resolution to sacrifice every other consideration 'to my duty, I hope your lordship will honour me 'with some confidence, that I shall make no ob-'jection to serve in any country.' 'My dear Mr. 'Booth,' answered the lord, 'you speak like a sol-'dier, and I greatly honour your sentiments. In-'deed, I own the justice of your inference from 'the example you have given; for to quit a wife, 'as you say, in the very infancy of marriage, is, I 'acknowledge, some trial of resolution.' Booth answered with a low bow; and then, after some immaterial conversation, his lordship promised to speak immediately to the minister, and appointed Mr. Booth to come to him again on the Wednesday morning, that he might be acquainted with his patron's success. The poor man now blushed and looked silly; till, after some time, he summoned up all his courage to his assistance, and relying on the other's friendship, he opened the whole affair of his circumstances, and confessed that he did not dare stir from his lodgings above one day in seven. His lordship expressed great concern at this account, and very kindly promised to take some opportunity of calling on him at his cousin Ellison's, when he hoped, he said, to bring him comfortable tidings.

Booth soon afterwards took his leave with the most profuse acknowledgments for so much goodness, and hastened home to acquaint his Amelia with what had so greatly overjoyed him. She high-

ly congratulated him on his having found so generous and powerful a friend, towards whom both their bosoms burnt with the warmest sentiments of gratitude. She was not, however, contented, till she had made Booth renew his promise in the most solemn manner of taking her with him. After which, they sat down with their little children to a scrag of mutton and broth, with the highest satisfaction, and very heartily drank his lordship's health in a pot of porter.

In the afternoon this happy couple, if the reader will allow me to call poor people happy, drank tea with Mrs. Ellison, where his lordship's praises being again repeated by both the husband and wife, were very loudly echoed by Mrs. Ellison. While they were here, the young lady, whom we have mentioned at the end of the last book to have made a fourth at whist, and with whom Amelia seemed so much pleased, came in; she was just returned to town from a short visit in the country, and her present visit was unexpected. It was, however, very agreeable to Amelia, who liked her still better upon a second interview, and was resolved to solicit her further acquaintance.

Mrs. Bennet still maintained some little reserve, but was much more familiar and communicative than before. She appeared moreover to be as little ceremonious as Mrs. Ellison had reported her, and very readily accepted Amelia's apology for not paying her the first visit, and agreed to drink tea with her the very next afternoon.

Whilst the above-mentioned company were sitting in Mrs. Ellison's parlour, sergeant Atkinson passed by the window, and knocked at the door. Mrs. Ellison no sooner saw him, than she said, 'Pray, Mr. Booth, who is that genteel young sergeant? he was here every day last week, to en-

'quire after you.' This was indeed a fact; the sergeant was apprehensive of the design of Murphy; but as the poor fellow had received all his answers from the maid or Mrs. Ellison, Booth had never heard a word of the matter. He was, however, greatly pleased with what he was now told, and burst forth into great praises of the sergeant, which were seconded by Amelia; who added, that he was her foster-brother, and she believed one of the honestest fellows in the world.

'And I'll swear,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'he is one 'of the prettiest—Do, Mr. Booth, desire him to 'walk in. A sergeant of the guards is a gentle-'man; and I had rather give such a man as you 'describe, a dish of tea, than any beau fribble of 'them all.'

Booth wanted no great solicitation to shew any kind of regard to Atkinson; and accordingly, the sergeant was ushered in, though not without some reluctance on his side. There is, perhaps, nothing more uneasy than those sensations which the French call the *mauvaise honte*, nor any more difficult to conquer; and poor Atkinson would, I am persuaded, have mounted a breach with less concern, than he shewed in walking cross a room before three ladies, two of whom were his avowed well wishers.

Though I do not entirely agree with the late learned Mr. Essex, the celebrated dancing-master's opinion, that dancing is the rudiment of polite education, as he would, I apprehend, exclude every other art and science; yet, it is certain, that persons whose feet have never been under the hands of the professors of that art, are apt to discover this want in their education in every motion, nay, even when they stand or sit still. They seem, indeed, to be overburthened with limbs, which they know not

how to use, as if, when nature hath finished her work, the dancing-master still is necessary to put it in motion.

Atkinson was at present an example of this observation, which doth so much honour to a profession for which I have a very high regard. He was handsome and exquisitely well made; and yet, as he had never learned to dance, he made so awkward an appearance in Mrs. Ellison's parlour, that the good lady herself, who had invited him in, could at first scarce refrain from laughter at his behaviour. He had not, however, been long in the room, before admiration of his person got the better of such risible ideas. So great is the advantage of beauty in men as well as women, and so sure is this quality in either sex of procuring some regard from the beholder.

The exceeding courteous behaviour of Mrs. Ellison, joined to that of Amelia and Booth, at length dissipated the uneasiness of Atkinson; and he gained sufficient confidence to tell the company some entertaining stories of accidents, that had happened in the army, within his knowledge; which, though they greatly pleased all present, are not however of consequence enough to have a place in this history.

Mrs. Ellison was so very importunate with her company to stay supper, that they all consented. As for the sergeant, he seemed to be none of the least welcome guests. She was, indeed, so pleased with what she had heard of him, and what she saw of him, that when a little warmed with wine, for she was no flincher at the bottle, she began to indulge some freedoms in her discourse towards him, that a little offended Amelia's delicacy; nay, they did not seem to be highly relished by the other lady. Though I am far from insinuating that these ex-

ceeded the bounds of decorum, or were, indeed, greater liberties than ladies of the middle age, and especially widows, do frequently allow to themselves.

CHAP. III.

Relating principally to the Affairs of Sergeant Atkinson.

THE next day, when all the same company, Atkinson only excepted, assembled in Amelia's apartment, Mrs. Ellison presently began to discourse of him, and that in terms not only of approbation, but even of affection. She called him her clever sergeant, and her dear sergeant, repeated often that he was the prettiest fellow in the army, and said it was a thousand pities he had not a commission; for that, if he had, she was sure he would become a general.

'I am of your opinion, Madam,' answered Booth; 'and as he hath got one hundred pounds of his own 'already, if he could find a wife now to help him 'to two or three hundred more, I think he might 'easily get a commission in a marching regiment; 'for I am convinced there is no colonel in the army 'would refuse him.'

'Refuse him, indeed!' said Mrs. Ellison; 'No; 'he would be a very pretty colonel that did. And 'upon my honour, I believe there are very few 'ladies who would refuse him, if he had but a 'proper opportunity of soliciting them. The co'lonel and the lady both would be better off, than 'with one of those pretty masters that I see walk-

'ing about, and dragging their long swords after 'them, when they should rather drag their leading-'strings.'

'Well said,' cries Booth, 'and spoken like a 'woman of spirit.—Indeed, I believe, they would 'be both better served.'

'True, captain,' answered Mrs. Ellison, 'I 'would rather leave the two first syllables out of 'the word gentleman, than the last.'

'Nay, I assure you,' replied Booth, 'there is 'not a quieter creature in the world. Though the 'fellow hath the bravery of a lion, he hath the 'meekness of a lamb. I can tell you stories enow 'of that kind, and so can my dear Amelia, when 'he was a boy.'

'O! if the match sticks there,' cries Amelia, 'I 'positively will not spoil his fortune by my silence. 'I can answer for him from his infancy, that he 'was one of the best-natured lads in the world. I 'will tell you a story or two of him, the truth of 'which I can testify from my own knowledge.—'When he was but six years old, he was at play 'with me at my mother's house, and a great point-'ing-dog bit him through the leg. The poor lad, 'in the midst of the anguish of his wound, declared 'he was overjoyed it had not happened to Miss '(for the same dog had just before snapt at me, 'and my petticoats had been my defence).——'Another instance of his goodness, which greatly 'recommended him to my father, and which I 'have loved him for ever since, was this: My 'father was a great lover of birds, and strictly 'forbad the spoiling of their nests. Poor Joe was 'one day caught upon a tree, and being con-'cluded guilty, was severely lashed for it; but it 'was afterwards discovered that another boy, a 'friend of Joe's, had robbed the nest of its young

'ones, and poor Joe had climbed the tree in order 'to restore them, notwithstanding which, he sub-'mitted to the punishment rather than he would 'impeach his companion. But if these stories 'appear childish and trifling, the duty and kind-'ness he hath shewn to his mother, must recom-'mend him to every one. Ever since he hath 'been fifteen years old, he hath more than half 'supported her; and when my brother died, I re-'member particularly, Joe at his desire, for he was 'much his favourite, had one of his suits given 'him; but, instead of his becoming finer on that 'occasion, another young fellow came to church 'in my brother's clothes, and my old nurse ap-'peared the same Sunday in a new gown, which 'her son had purchased for her with the sale of his 'legacy.'

'Well, I protest, he is a very worthy creature,' said Mrs. Bennet.

'He is a charming fellow,' cries Mrs. Ellison,—'but then the name of sergeant, Captain Booth. 'there, as the plays says, my pride brings me off 'again.'

And whatsoever the sages charge on pride,
The angels fall, and twenty other good faults beside;
On earth I'm sure---I'm sure---something---calling
Pride saves man, and our sex too from falling.——

Here a footman's rap at the door shook the room. Upon which, Mrs. Ellison, running to the window, cried out, 'Let me die if it is not my lord; what 'shall I do? I must be at home to him; but sup-'pose he should inquire for you, captain, what shall 'I say? or will you go down with me?'

The company were in some confusion at this instant, and before they had agreed on any thing, Booth's little girl came running into the room,

and said, ‘ There was a prodigious great gentle-‘ man coming up stairs.’ She was immediately followed by his lordship, who, as he knew Booth must be at home, made very little or no inquiry at the door.

Amelia was taken somewhat at a surprise, but she was too polite to shew much confusion; for though she knew nothing of the town, she had had a genteel education, and kept the best company the country afforded. The ceremonies therefore past as usual, and they all sat down.

His lordship soon addressed himself to Booth, saying, ‘ As I have what I think good news for ‘ you, Sir, I could not delay giving myself the plea-‘ sure of communicating it to you. I have men-‘ tioned your affair where I promised you, and I ‘ have no doubt of my success. One may easily ‘ perceive, you know, from the manner of people's ‘ behaving upon such occasions; and, indeed, ‘ when I related your case, I found there was much ‘ inclination to serve you. Great men, Mr. Booth, ‘ must do things in their own time; but I think ‘ you may depend on having something done very ‘ soon.’

Booth made many acknowledgements for his lordship's goodness, and now a second time paid all the thanks which would have been due, even had the favour been obtained. This art of promising is the œconomy of a great man's pride, a sort of good husbandry in conferring favours, by which they receive tenfold in acknowledgements for every obligation, I mean among those who really intend the service; for there are others who cheat poor men of their thanks, without ever designing to deserve them at all.

This matter being sufficiently discussed, the con-

versation took a gayer turn; and my lord began to entertain the ladies with some of that elegant discourse, which, though most delightful to hear, it is impossible should ever be read.

His lordship was so highly pleased with Amelia, that he could not help being somewhat particular to her; but this particularity distinguished itself only in a higher degree of respect, and was so very polite, and so very distant, that she herself was pleased, and at his departure, which was not till he had far xceeded the length of a common visit, declared he was the finest gentleman she had ever seen; with which sentiment her husband and Mrs. Ellison both entirely concurred.

Mrs. Bennet, on the contrary, expressed some little dislike to my lord's complaisance, which she called excessive. 'For my own part,' said she, 'I have not the least relish for those very fine 'gentlemen; what the world generally calls po'liteness, I term insincerity; and I am more 'charmed with the stories which Mrs. Booth told 'us of the honest sergeant, than with all that the 'finest gentlemen in the world ever said in their 'lives.'

'O! to be sure,' cries Mrs. Ellison, '*All for 'Love, or the World well Lost*, is a motto very pro'per for some folks to wear in their coat of arms; 'but the generality of the world will, I believe, agree 'with that lady's opinion of my cousin, rather than 'with Mrs. Bennet.'

Mrs. Bennet, seeing Mrs. Ellison took offence at what she said, thought proper to make some apology, which was very readily accepted, and so ended the visit.

We cannot however put an end to the chapter, without observing, that such is the ambitious temper

of beauty, that it may always apply to itself that celebrated passage in Lucan,

Nec quenquam jam ferre potest Cæsarve priorem,
Pompeiusve parem.——

Indeed, I believe, it may be laid down as a general rule, that no woman, who hath any great pretensions to admiration, is ever well pleased in a company, where she perceives herself to fill only the second place. This observation, however, I humbly submit to the judgment of the ladies, and hope it will be considered as retracted by me, if they shall dissent from my opinion.

CHAP. IV.

Containing Matters that require no Preface.

WHEN Booth and his wife were left alone together, they both extremely exulted in their good fortune, in having found so good a friend as his lordship; nor were they wanting in very warm expressions of their gratitude towards Mrs. Ellison.—After which, they began to lay down schemes of living when Booth should have his commission of captain; and, after the exactest computation, concluded, that, with economy, they should be able to save at least fifty pounds a year out of their income, in order to pay their debts.

These matters being well settled, Amelia asked Booth what he thought of Mrs. Bennet? 'I think, 'my dear,' answered Booth, 'that she hath been 'formerly a very pretty woman.' 'I am mistaken,'

replied she, 'if she be not a very good creature. 'I don't know I ever took such a liking to any one 'on so short an acquaintance. I fancy she hath 'been a very sprightly woman; for, if you ob-'serve, she discovers, by starts, a great vivacity in 'her countenance.' 'I made the same observa-'tion,' cries Booth; 'Sure some strange misfor-'tune hath befallen her.' 'A misfortune indeed!' answered Amelia; 'sure, child, you forget what 'Mrs. Ellison told us, that she had lost a beloved 'husband. A misfortune which I have often won-'dered at any woman's surviving.'—At which words she cast a tender look at Booth, and presently afterwards throwing herself upon his neck, cried—'O Heavens! what a happy creature am 'I? when I consider the dangers you have gone 'through, how I exult in my bliss!' The good-natured reader will suppose that Booth was not deficient in returning such tenderness, after which, the conversation became too fond to be here related.

The next morning, Mrs. Ellison addressed herself to Booth as follows: 'I shall make no apology, 'Sir, for what I am going to say, as it proceeds 'from my friendship for yourself and your dear lady. 'I am convinced then, Sir, there is something more 'than accident in your going abroad only one day 'in the week. Now, Sir, if, as I am afraid, mat-'ters are not altogether as well as I wish them, I 'beg, since I do not believe you are provided with 'a lawyer, that you will suffer me to recommend 'one to you. The person I shall mention, is, I assure 'you, of much ability in his profession, and I have 'known him do great services to gentlemen under 'a cloud. Do not be ashamed of your circum-'stances, my dear friend. They are a much greater

'scandal to those who have left so much merit un-
'provided for.'

Booth gave Mrs. Ellison abundance of thanks for her kindness, and explicitly confest to her that her conjectures were right, and, without hesitation, accepted the offer of her friend's assistance.

Mrs. Ellison then acquainted him with her apprehensions on his account. She said, she had both yesterday and this morning seen two or three very ugly suspicious fellows pass several times by her window. 'Upon all accounts,' said she, 'my dear
'Sir, I advise you to keep yourself close confined
'till the lawyer hath been with you. I am sure he
'will get you your liberty, at least of walking about
'within the verge—There's something to be done
'with the board of green-cloth, I don't know what;
'but this I know, that several gentlemen have lived
'here a long time very comfortably, and have de-
'fied all the vengeance of their creditors. How-
'ever, in the mean time, you must be a close pri-
'soner with your lady; and I believe there is no
'man in England but would exchange his liberty
'for the same gaol.'

She then departed in order to send for the attorney, and presently afterwards the sergeant arrived with news of the like kind. He said, he had scraped an acquaintance with Murphy. 'I hope your ho-
'nour will pardon me,' cries Atkinson, 'but I
'pretended to have a small demand upon your ho-
'nour myself, and offered to employ him in the
'business. Upon which, he told me, that if I
'would go with him to the Marshal's Court, and
'make affidavit of my debt, he should be able very
'shortly to get it me; for I shall have the captain
'in hold,' cries he, 'within a day or two.'—'I
'wish,' said the sergeant, 'I could do your honour

'any service. Shall I walk about all day before 'the door? or shall I be porter, and watch it in 'the inside, till your honour can find some means 'of securing yourself? I hope you will not be 'offended at me, but I beg you would take care 'of falling into Murphy's hands; for he hath the 'character of the greatest villain upon earth.—I 'am afraid you will think me too bold, Sir; but 'I have a little money; if it can be of any service, 'do, pray your honour, command it. It can ne-'ver do me so much good any other way. Con-'sider, Sir, I owe all I have to yourself, and my 'dear mistress.'

Booth stood a moment, as if he had been thunderstruck, and then, the tears bursting from his eyes, he said: 'Upon my soul, Atkinson, you over-'come me. I scarce ever heard of so much good-'ness, nor do I know how to express my senti-'ments of it. But be assured, as for your money, 'I will not accept it, and let it satisfy you, that in 'my present circumstances it would do me no es-'sential service; but this be assured of likewise, 'that whilst I live, I shall never forget the kindness 'of the offer——However, as I apprehend I may 'be in some danger of fellows getting into the house, 'for a day or two, as I have no guard but a poor 'little girl, I will not refuse the goodness you offer 'to shew in my protection. And I make no doubt 'but Mrs. Ellison will let you sit in her parlour 'for that purpose.'

Atkinson, with the utmost readiness, undertook the office of porter; and Mrs. Ellison as readily allotted him a place in her back-parlour, where he continued three days together, from eight in the morning till twelve at night; during which time, he had sometimes the company of Mrs. Ellison, and sometimes of Booth, Amelia, and Mrs. Bennet

too; for this last had taken as great a fancy to Amelia, as Amelia had to her; and therefore, as Mr. Booth's affairs were now no secret in the neighbourhood, made her frequent visits during the confinement of her husband, and consequently her own.

Nothing, as I remember, happened in this interval of time, more worthy notice than the following card, which Amelia received from her old acquaintance Mrs. James: 'Mrs. James sends her compliments to Mrs. Booth, and desires to know how she does; for as she hath not had the favour of seeing her at her own house, or of meeting her in any public place, in so long time, fears it may be owing to ill health.'

Amelia had long given over all thoughts of her friend, and doubted not but that she was as entirely given over by her; she was very much surprised at this message, and under some doubt whether it was not meant as an insult, especially from the mention of public places, which she thought so inconsistent with her present circumstances, of which she supposed Mrs. James was well apprised. However, at the entreaty of her husband, who languished for nothing more than to be again reconciled to his friend James, Amelia undertook to pay the lady a visit, and to examine into the mystery of this conduct, which appeared to her so unaccountable.

Mrs. James received her with a degree of civility that amazed Amelia, no less than her coldness had done before. She resolved to come to an eclaircissement, and having sat out some company that came in, when they were alone together, Amelia, after some silence, and many offers to speak, at last said, 'My dear Jenny (if you will now suffer me to call you by so familiar a name), have you en-

'tirely forgot a certain young lady who had the 'pleasure of being your intimate acquaintance at 'Montpelier?' 'Whom do you mean, dear Ma-'dam?' cries Mrs. James, with great concern. 'I 'mean myself,' answered Amelia—'You surprise 'me, Madam,' replied Mrs. James: 'How can you 'ask me that question?'—'Nay, my dear, I do not 'intend to offend you,' cries Amelia, 'but I am 'really desirous to solve to myself the reason of that 'coldness which you shewed me, when you did 'me the favour of a visit. Can you think, my 'dear, I was not disappointed when I expected to 'meet an intimate friend, to receive a cold formal 'visitant? I desire you to examine your own heart, 'and answer me honestly, if you do not think I 'had some little reason to be dissatisfied with your 'behaviour?'—'Indeed, Mrs. Booth,' answered the other lady, 'you surprise me very much; if 'there was any thing displeasing to you in my be-'haviour, I am extremely concerned at it. I did 'not know I had been defective in any of the rules 'of civility, but if I was, Madam, I ask your par-'don.'—'Is civility then, my dear,' replied Ame-'lia, 'a synonymous term with friendship? Could 'I have expected, when I parted the last time with 'Miss Jenny Bath, to have met her the next time 'in the shape of a fine lady, complaining of the 'hardship of climbing up two pair of stairs to visit 'me, and then approaching me with the distant air 'of a new or a slight acquaintance? Do you think 'my dear Mrs. James, if the tables had been turn-'ed, if my fortune had been as high in the world 'as yours, and you in my distress and abject con-'dition, that I would not have climbed as high as 'the monument to visit you?'—'Sure, Madam,' cried Mrs. James, 'I mistake you, or you have 'greatly mistaken me. Can you complain of my

'not visiting you, who have owed me a visit al-'most these three weeks? Nay, did I not even 'then send you a card, which sure was doing more 'than all the friendship and good-breeding in the 'world required; but, indeed, as I had met you in 'no public place, I really thought you was ill.'—'How can you mention public places to me,' said Amelia, 'when you can hardly be a stranger to 'my present situation? Did you not know, Ma-'dam, that I was ruined?'—'No, indeed, Ma-'dam, did I not,' replied Mrs. James; 'I am sure 'I should have been highly concerned if I had.'—'Why, sure, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you could 'not imagine that we were in affluent circum-'stances, when you found us in such a place, and 'in such a condition.'—'Nay, my dear,' answered Mrs. James, 'since you are pleased to mention it 'first yourself, I own, I was a little surprised to 'see you in no better lodgings; but I concluded 'you had your own reasons for liking them; and 'for my own part, I have laid it down as a positive 'rule, never to inquire into the private affairs of 'any one, especially of my friends. I am not of 'the humour of some ladies, who confine the cir-'cle of their acquaintance to one part of the town, 'and would not be known to visit in the city for 'the world. For my part, I never dropt an ac-'quaintance with any one, while it was reputable 'to keep it up; and I can solemnly declare I have 'not a friend in the world for whom I have a great-'er esteem than I have for Mrs. Booth.'

At this instant, the arrival of a new visitant put an end to the discourse; and Amelia soon after took her leave without the least anger, but with some little unavoidable contempt for a lady, in whose opinion, as we have hinted before, outward form and ceremony constituted the whole essence of friend-

ship; who valued all her acquaintance alike, as each individual served equally to fill up a place in her visiting roll, and who, in reality, had not the least concern for the good qualities or well-being of any of them.

CHAP. V.

Containing much heroic Matter.

AT the end of three days, Mrs. Ellison's friend had so far purchased Mr. Booth's liberty, that he could walk again abroad within the verge, without any danger of having a warrant backed against him by the Board before he had notice. As for the ill-looked persons that had given the alarm, it was now discovered that another unhappy gentleman, and not Booth, was the object of their pursuit.

Mr. Booth now being delivered from his fears, went, as he had formerly done, to take his morning walk in the Park. Here he met Colonel Bath in company with some other officers, and very civilly paid his respects to him. But, instead of returning the salute, the colonel looked him full in the face with a very stern countenance; and, if he could be said to take any notice of him, it was in such a manner as to inform him he would take no notice of him.

Booth was not more hurt than surprised at this behaviour, and resolved to know the reason of it. He therefore watched an opportunity till the colonel was alone, and then walked boldly up to him, and desired to know if he had given him any offence?—The colonel answered hastily, 'Sir, I am

'above being offended with you, nor do I think it 'consistent with my dignity to make you any an-'swer.' Booth replied, 'I don't know, Sir, that 'I have done any thing to deserve this treatment.' —'Look'ee, Sir,' cries the colonel, 'if I had not 'formerly had some respect for you, I should not 'think you worth my resentment. However, as 'you are a gentleman born, and an officer, and as 'I have had an esteem for you, I will give you 'some marks of it by putting it in your power to 'do yourself justice. I will tell you therefore, Sir, 'that you have acted like a scoundrel.'—'If we 'were not in the Park,' answered Booth warmly, 'I would thank you very properly for that com-'pliment.'—'O, Sir!' cries the colonel, 'we can 'be soon in a convenient place.' Upon which Booth answered, he would attend him wherever he pleased.—The colonel then bid him come along, and strutted forward directly up Constitution-Hill to Hyde-Park, Booth following him at first, and afterwards walking before him, till they came to that place which may be properly called the field of blood, being that part, a little to the left of the ring, which heroes have chosen for the scene of their exit out of this world.

Booth reached the ring some time before the colonel; for he mended not his pace any more than a Spaniard. To say truth, I believe it was not in his power; for he had so long accustomed himself to one and the same strut, that as a horse, used always to trotting, can scarce be forced into a gallop, so could no passion force the colonel to alter his pace.

At length, however, both parties arrived at the lists, where the colonel very deliberately took off his wig and coat, and laid them on the grass, and then drawing his sword, advanced to Booth, who had

likewise his drawn weapon in his hand, but had made no other preparation for the combat.

The combatants now engaged with great fury, and after two or three passes, Booth ran the colonel through the body and threw him on the ground, at the same time possessing himself of the colonel's sword.

As soon as the colonel was become master of his speech, he called out to Booth in a very kind voice, and said, 'You have done my business, and satis-'fied me that you are a man of honour, and that 'my brother James must have been mistaken; for 'I am convinced, that no man who will draw his 'sword in so gallant a manner, is capable of being 'a rascal; d—n me, give me a buss, my dear boy, 'I ask your pardon for that infamous appellation I 'dishonoured your dignity with; but, d—n me, if 'it was not purely out of love, and to give you an 'opportunity of doing yourself justice, which I 'own you have done like a man of honour. What 'may be the consequence I know not, but I hope, 'at least, I shall live to reconcile you with my bro-'ther.'

Booth shewed great concern, and even horror in his countenance. 'Why, my dear colonel,' said he, 'would you force me to this? for Heaven's 'sake, tell me, what I have ever done to offend 'you?'

'Me!' cried the colonel. 'Indeed, my dear 'child, you never did any thing to offend me.— 'Nay, I have acted the part of a friend to you in 'the whole affair. I maintained your cause with 'my brother as long as decency would permit; I 'could not flatly contradict him, though, indeed, 'I scarce believed him. But what could I do; if 'I had not fought with you, I must have been 'obliged to have fought with him: however, I

'hope, what is done will be sufficient, and that 'matters may be discommodated without your be-'ing put to the necessity of fighting any more on 'this occasion.'

'Never regard me,' cried Booth eagerly, 'for 'Heaven's sake, think of your own preservation. 'Let me put you into a chair, and get you a sur-'geon.'

'Thou art a noble lad,' cries the colonel, who was now got on his legs, 'and I am glad the 'business is so well over. For though your sword 'went quite through, it slanted so, that I appre-'hend there is little danger of life. However, I 'think there is enough done to put an honour-'able end to the affair, especially as you was so 'hasty to disarm me. I bleed a little, but I can 'walk to the house by the water; and if you will 'send me a chair thither, I shall be obliged to 'you.'

As the colonel refused any assistance (indeed he was very able to walk without it, though with somewhat less dignity than usual), Booth set forward to Grosvenor-Gate, in order to procure the chair, and soon after returned with one to his friend; whom having conveyed into it, he attended himself on foot into Bond-street, where then lived a very eminent surgeon.

The surgeon having probed the wound, turned towards Booth, who was apparently the guilty person, and said, with a smile, 'Upon my word, 'Sir, you have performed the business with great 'dexterity.'

'Sir,' cries the colonel to the surgeon, 'I would 'not have you imagine I am afraid to die. I think 'I know more what belongs to the dignity of a 'man; and, I believe, I have shewn it at the head 'of a line of battle. Do not impute my concern

'to that fear, when I ask you whether there is or 'is not any danger?'

'Really, colonel,' answered the surgeon, who well knew the complexion of the gentleman then under his hands, 'it would appear like presumption to say that a man who hath been just run 'through the body, is in no manner of danger. 'But this, I think, I may assure you, that I yet 'perceive no very bad symptoms, and unless 'something worse should appear, or a fever be the 'consequence, I hope you may live to be again, 'with all your dignity, at the head of a line of 'battle.'

'I am glad to hear that is your opinion,' quoth the colonel, 'for I am not desirous of dying, though 'I am not afraid of it. But if any thing worse than 'you apprehend should happen, I desire you will 'be a witness of my declaration, that this young 'gentleman is entirely innocent. I forced him to 'do what he did. My dear Booth, I am pleased 'matters are as they are. You are the first man 'that ever gained an advantage over me; but 'it was very lucky for you that you disarmed 'me, and I doubt not but you have the equanimity to think so. If the business, therefore, 'hath ended without doing any thing to the purpose, it was fortune's pleasure, and neither of our 'faults.'

Booth heartily embraced the colonel, and assured him of the great satisfaction he had received from the surgeon's opinion; and soon after the two combatants took their leave of each other. The colonel, after he was drest, went in a chair to his lodgings, and Booth walked on foot to his; where he luckily arrived without meeting any of Mr. Murphy's gang; a danger which never once occurred to his imagination till he was out of it.

The affair he had been about had indeed so entirely occupied his mind, that it had obliterated every other idea; among the rest, it caused him so absolutely to forget the time of the day, that though he had exceeded the time of dining above two hours, he had not the least suspicion of being at home later than usual.

CHAP. VI.

In which the reader will find Matter worthy his Consideration.

AMELIA having waited above an hour for her husband, concluded, as he was the most punctual man alive, that he had met with some engagement abroad, and sat down to her meal with her children; which, as it was always uncomfortable in the absence of her husband, was very short; so that before his return, all the apparatus of dining was entirely removed.

Booth sat some time with his wife, expecting every minute when the little maid would make her appearance; at last, curiosity, I believe, rather than appetite, made him ask, how long it was to dinner? 'To dinner! my dear,' answered Amelia, 'sure 'you have dined, I hope?' Booth replied in the negative; upon which his wife started from her chair, and bestirred herself as nimbly to provide him a repast, as the most industrious hostess in the kingdom doth, when some unexpected guest of extraordinary quality arrives at her house.

The reader hath not, I think, from any passages hitherto recorded in this history, had much reason

to accuse Amelia of a blameable curiosity ; he will not, I hope, conclude that she gave an instance of any such fault, when, upon Booth's having so long overstayed his time, and so greatly mistaken the hour of the day, and upon some other circumstances of his behaviour (for he was too honest to be good at concealing any of his thoughts), she said to him, after he had done eating, ' My dear, ' I am sure something more than ordinary hath ' happened to-day, and I beg you will tell me ' what it is.'

Booth answered, that nothing of any consequence had happened ; that he had been detained by a friend, whom he met accidentally, longer than he expected. In short, he made many shuffling and evasive answers, not boldly lying out, which perhaps would have succeeded, but poorly and vainly endeavouring to reconcile falsehood with truth. An attempt which seldom fails to betray the most practised deceiver.

How impossible was it therefore for poor Booth to succeed in an art for which nature had so entirely disqualified him. His countenance, indeed, confessed faster than his tongue denied ; and the whole of his behaviour gave Amelia an alarm, and made her suspect something very bad had happened ; and as her thoughts turned presently on the badness of their circumstances, she feared some mischief from his creditors had befallen him : for she was too ignorant of such matters to know, that if he had fallen into the hands of the Philistines (which is the name given by the faithful to bailiffs) he would hardly have been able so soon to recover his liberty. Booth at last perceived her to be so uneasy, that as he saw no hopes of contriving any fiction to satisfy her, he thought himself obliged to tell her the truth, or at least part of

the truth, and confessed that he had had a little skirmish with Colonel Bath, in which, he said, the colonel had received a slight wound, not at all dangerous; and this, says he, is all the whole matter. 'If it be so,' cries Amelia, 'I thank Heaven 'no worse hath happened; but why, my dear, 'will you ever converse with that madman, who 'can embrace a friend one moment, and fight with 'him the next?' 'Nay, my dear,' answered Booth, 'you yourself must confess, though he be a little 'too much on the *qui vive*, he is a man of great 'honour and good-nature.' 'Tell me not,' replied she, 'of such good-nature and honour as 'would sacrifice a friend, and a whole family, to 'a ridiculous whim. O, Heavens!' cried she, falling upon her knees, 'from what misery have 'I escaped, from what have these poor babes 'escaped, through your gracious providence this 'day!'—Then turning to her husband—she cried —'But are you sure the monster's wound is no 'more dangerous than you say? a monster surely 'I may call him, who can quarrel with a man that 'could not, that I am convinced would not, offend 'him.'

Upon this question, Booth repeated the assurances which the surgeon had given them, perhaps with a little enlargement, which pretty well satisfied Amelia; and instead of blaming her husband for what he had done, she tenderly embraced him, and again returned thanks to Heaven for his safety.

In the evening, Booth insisted on paying a short visit to the colonel, highly against the inclination of Amelia, who, by many arguments and entreaties, endeavoured to dissuade her husband from continuing an acquaintance in which, she said, she should always foresee much danger for the

future. However, she was at last prevailed upon to acquiesce; and Booth went to the colonel, whose lodgings happened to be in the verge as well as his own.

He found the colonel in his night-gown, and his great chair, engaged with another officer at a game of chess. He rose immediately, and having heartily embraced Booth, presented him to his friend, saying, he had the honour to introduce to him as brave and as *fortitudinous* a man as any in the king's dominions—He then took Booth with him into the next room, and desired him not to mention a word of what had happened in the morning, saying, 'I am very well satisfied that no 'more hath happened; however, as it ended in 'nothing, I could wish it might remain a secret. Booth told him he was heartily glad to find him so well, and promised never to mention it more to any one.

The game at chess being but just begun, and neither of the parties having gained any considerable advantage, they neither of them insisted on continuing it; and now the colonel's antagonist took his leave, and left the colonel and Booth together.

As soon as they were alone, the latter earnestly entreated the former to acquaint him with the real cause of his anger; 'for, may I perish,' cries Booth, 'if I can even guess what I have ever 'done to offend either you, or your brother, Co'lonel James.'

'Look'ee, child,' cries the colonel, 'I tell you 'I am for my own part satisfied; for I am con'vinced that a man who will fight, can never be 'a rascal; and, therefore, why should you inquire 'any more of me at present? when I see my bro'ther James, I hope to reconcile all matters, and

'perhaps no more swords need be drawn on this 'occasion.' But Booth still persisting in his desire, the colonel, after some hesitation, with a tremendous oath, cried out, 'I do not think myself at liberty to refuse you after the indignity I offered 'you; so, since you demand it of me, I will inform you. My brother told me you had used 'him dishonourably, and had divellicated his character behind his back. He gave me his word 'too, that he was well assured of what he said. 'What could I have done? though I own to you 'I did not believe him, and your behaviour since 'hath convinced me I was in the right; I must 'either have given him the lie, and fought with 'him, or else I was obliged to behave as I did, 'and fight with you. And now, my lad, I leave 'it to you to do as you please; but if you are laid 'under any necessity to do yourself further justice, 'it is your own fault.'

'Alas! colonel,' answered Booth, 'besides the 'obligations I have to the colonel, I have really 'so much love for him, that I think of nothing less 'than resentment. All I wish, is to have this affair brought to an eclaircissement, and to satisfy 'him that he is in an error; for though his assertions are cruelly injurious, and I have never deserved them; yet I am convinced he would not 'say what he did not himself think. Some rascal, 'envious of his friendship for me, hath belied me 'to him; and the only resentment I desire, is 'to convince him of his mistake.

At these words—the colonel grinned horribly a ghastly smile, or rather sneer, and answered, 'Young gentleman, you may do as you please; 'but by the eternal dignity of man, if any man 'breathing had taken a liberty with my character, '—Here, here—Mr. Booth, (shewing his fingers)

'here—d—n me, should be his nostrils, he should 'breathe through my hands, and breathe his last, 'd—n me.'

Booth answered, 'I think, colonel, I may appeal to your testimony that I dare do myself 'justice; since he who dare draw his sword 'against you, can hardly be supposed to fear any 'other person; but I repeat to you again, that I 'love Colonel James so well, and am so greatly 'obliged to him, that it would be almost indifferent to me, whether I directed my sword 'against his breast or my own.'

The colonel's muscles were considerably softened by Booth's last speech; but he again contracted them into a vast degree of fierceness, before he cried out——'Boy, thou hast reason 'enough to be vain; for thou art the first person 'that ever could proudly say he gained an advantage over me in combat. I believe, indeed, thou 'art not afraid of any man breathing, and as I 'know thou hast some obligations to my brother, 'I do not discommend thee; for nothing more becomes the dignity of a man than gratitude. Besides, as I am satisfied my brother can produce 'the author of the slander—I say I am satisfied 'of that, d—n me, if any man alive dares assert 'the contrary; for that would be to make my 'brother himself a liar, I will make him produce 'his author; and then, my dear boy, your doing 'yourself proper justice there will bring you 'finely out of the whole affair. As soon as my 'surgeon gives me leave to go abroad, which, 'I hope, will be in a few days, I will bring my 'brother James to a tavern, where you shall meet 'us; and I will engage my honour, my whole 'dignity to you, to make you friends.'

The assurance of the colonel gave Booth great

pleasure; for few persons ever loved a friend better than he did James; and as for doing military justice on the author of that scandalous report which had incensed his friend against him, not Bath himself was ever more ready, on such an occasion, than Booth to execute it. He soon after took his leave, and returned home in high spirits to his Amelia, whom he found in Mrs. Ellison's apartment, engaged in a party at ombre with that lady and her right honorable cousin.

His lordship had, it seems, had a second interview with the great man, and having obtained further hopes (for I think there was not yet an absolute promise) of success in Mr. Booth's affairs, his usual good-nature brought him immediately to acquaint Mr. Booth with it. As he did not therefore find him at home, and as he met with the two ladies together, he resolved to stay till his friend's return, which he was assured would not be long, especially as he was so lucky, he said, to have no particular engagement that whole evening.

We remarked before, that his lordship, at the first interview with Amelia, had distinguished her by a more particular address from the other ladies; but that now appeared to be rather owing to his perfect good-breeding, as she was then to be considered as the mistress of the house, than from any other preference. His present behaviour made this still more manifest; for as he was now in Mrs. Ellison's apartment, though she was his relation and an old acquaintance, he applied his conversation rather more to her than to Amelia. His eyes, indeed, were now and then guilty of the contrary distinction, but this was only by stealth; for they constantly withdrew the moment they were discovered. In short, he treated Amelia

with the greatest distance, and at the same time with the most profound and awful respect; his conversation was so general, so lively, and so obliging, that Amelia, when she added to his agreeableness the obligations she had to him for his friendship to Booth, was certainly as much pleased with his lordship, as any virtuous woman can possibly be with any man, besides her own husband.

CHAP. VII.

Containing various Matters.

WE have already mentioned the good humour in which Booth returned home; and the reader will easily believe it was not a little increased by the good humour in which he found his company. My lord received him with the utmost marks of friendship and affection, and told him that his affairs went on as well almost as he himself could desire, and that he doubted not very soon to wish him joy of a company.

When Booth had made a proper return to all his lordship's unparalleled goodness, he whispered Amelia, that the colonel was entirely out of danger, and almost as well as himself. This made her satisfaction complete, threw her into such spirits, and gave such a lustre to her eyes, that her face, as Horace says, was too dazzling to be looked at; it was ce tainly too handsome to be looked at without the highest admiration.

His lordship departed about ten o'clock, and left the company in raptures with him, especially

the two ladies, of whom it is difficult to say which exceeded the other in his commendations. Mrs. Ellison swore she believed he was the best of all human kind; and Amelia, without making any exception, declared he was the finest gentleman, and most agreeable man, she had ever seen in her life; adding, it was a great pity he should remain single. 'That's true, indeed,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'and I have often lamented it, nay, I am asto-'nished at it, considering the great liking he 'always shews for our sex, and he may certainly 'have the choice of all. The real reason, I be-'lieve, is, his fondness for his sister's children. 'I declare, Madam, if you was to see his be-'haviour to them, you would think they were his 'own. Indeed, he is vastly fond of all manner of 'children.' 'Good creature,' cries Amelia, 'if 'ever he doth me the honour of another visit, I 'am resolved I will shew him my little things. I 'think, Mrs. Ellison, as you say my lord loves 'children, I may say, without vanity, he will not 'see many such.' 'No, indeed, will he not,' answered Mrs. Ellison: 'and now I think on't, Ma-'dam, I wonder at my own stupidity in never 'making the offer before; but since you put it 'into my head, if you will give me leave, I'll take 'master and miss to wait on my lord's nephew and 'niece. They are very pretty behaved children; 'and little master and miss will be, I dare swear, 'very happy in their acquaintance; besides, if my 'lord himself should see them, I know what will 'happen; for he is the most generous of all human 'beings.'

Amelia very readily accepted the favour which Mrs. Ellison offered her; but Booth exprest some reluctance. 'Upon my word, my dear,' said he, 'with a smile, this behaviour of ours puts me in

'mind of the common conduct of beggars; who, 'whenever they receive a favour, are sure to send 'other objects to the same fountain of charity. 'Don't we, my dear, repay our obligations to my 'lord in the same manner, by sending our children 'a begging to him?'

'O beastly!' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'how could 'such a thought enter your brains? I protest, Ma-'dam, I begin to grow ashamed of this husband 'of yours. How can you have so vulgar a way 'of thinking? Begging, indeed! the poor little 'dear things a begging—If my lord was capable 'of such a thought, though he was my own bro-'ther instead of my cousin, I should scorn him too 'much ever to enter his doors.'—'O dear Ma-'dam!' answered Amelia, 'you take Mr. Booth 'too seriously, when he was only in jest; and the 'children shall wait upon you whenever you 'please.'

Though Booth had been a little more in earnest than Amelia had represented him, and was not, perhaps, quite so much in the wrong as he was considered by Mrs. Ellison; yet, seeing there were two to one against him, he wisely thought proper to recede, and let his smile go off with that air of a jest, which his wife had given it.

Mrs. Ellison, however, could not let it pass without paying some compliments to Amelia's understanding, nor without some obscure reflections upon Booth, with whom she was more offended than the matter required. She was indeed a woman of most profuse generosity, and could not bear a thought which she deemed vulgar or sneaking. She afterwards launched forth the most profuse encomiums of his lordship's liberality, and concluded the evening with some instances which he had given of that virtue, which, if not the noblest, is, perhaps, one

of the most useful to society, with which great and rich men can be endowed.

The next morning early, Sergeant Atkinson came to wait on Lieutenant Booth, and desired to speak with his honour in private. Upon which, the lieutenant and sergeant took a walk together in the Park. Booth expected every minute when the sergeant would open his mouth; under which expectation he continued till he came to the end of the Mall, and so he might have continued till he came to the end of the world; for though several words stood at the end of the sergeant's lips, there they were likely to remain for ever. He was, indeed, in the condition of a miser, whom a charitable impulse hath impelled to draw a few pence to the edge of his pocket, where they are altogether as secure as if they were in the bottom; for, as the one hath not the heart to part with a farthing, so neither had the other the heart to speak a word.

Booth at length, wondering that the sergeant did not speak, asked him, What his business was? when the latter with a stammering voice began the following apology: 'I hope, Sir, your honour will 'not be angry' nor take any thing amiss of me. 'I do assure you, it was not of my seeking; nay, 'I dare not proceed in the matter without first 'asking you leave. Indeed, if I had taken any 'liberties from the goodness you have been pleased 'to shew me, I should look upon myself as one of 'the most worthless and despicable of wretches; 'but nothing is farther from my thoughts. I 'know the distance which is between us; and 'because your honour hath been so kind and good 'as to treat me with more familiarity than any 'other officer ever did, if I had been base enough 'to take any freedoms, or to encroach upon your 'honour's goodness, I should deserve to be whipt

'through the regiment. I hope, therefore, Sir, 'you will not suspect me of any such attempt.'

'What can all this mean, Atkinson,' cries Booth; 'what mighty matter would you introduce with all this previous apology?'

'I am almost ashamed and afraid to mention it,' answered the sergeant, 'and yet I am sure your 'honour will believe what I have said, and not 'think any thing owing to my own presumption; 'and, at the same time, I have no reason to think 'you would do any thing to spoil my fortune in an 'honest way, when it is dropt into my lap without my own seeking. For, may I perish, if it is 'not all the lady's own goodness, and I hope in 'Heaven, with your honour's leave, I shall live to 'make her amends for it.'—In a word, that we may not detain the reader's curiosity quite so long as he did Booth's, he acquainted that gentleman that he had an offer of marriage from a lady of his acquaintance, to whose company he had introduced him, and desired his permission to accept of it.

Booth must have been very dull, indeed, if, after what the sergeant had said, and after what he had heard Mrs. Ellison say, he had wanted any information concerning the lady. He answered him briskly and cheerfully, that he had his free consent to marry any woman whatever; 'and the greater 'and richer she is,' added he, 'the more I shall 'be pleased with the match. I don't inquire who 'the lady is,' said he, smiling, 'but I hope she 'will make as good a wife as, I am convinced, 'her husband will deserve.'

'Your honour hath been always too good to 'me,' cries Atkinson, 'but this I promise you, I 'will do all in my power to merit the kindness she

'is pleased to shew me. I will be bold to say, 'she will marry an honest man, though he is but 'a poor one; and she shall never want any thing 'which I can give her or do for her, while my 'name is Joseph Atkinson.'

'And so her name is a secret, Joe, is it?' cries Booth.

'Why, Sir,' answered the sergeant, 'I hope 'your honour will not insist upon knowing that, 'as I think it would be dishonourable in me to 'mention it.'

'Not at all,' replied Booth; 'I am the farthest 'in the world from any such desire. I know thee 'better than to imagine thou wouldst disclose the 'name of the fair lady.' Booth then shook Atkinson heartily by the hand, and assured him earnestly of the joy he had in his good fortune; for which the good sergeant failed not of making all proper acknowledgements. After which they departed, and Booth returned home.

As Mrs. Ellison opened the door, Booth hastily rushed by; for he had the utmost difficulty to prevent laughing in her face. He ran directly up stairs, and, throwing himself into a chair, discharged such a fit of laughter as greatly surprised, and at first almost frightened, his wife.

Amelia, it will be supposed, presently inquired into the cause of this phænomenon, with which Booth, as soon as he was able (for that was not within a few minutes) acquainted her. The news did not affect her in the same manner as it had affected her husband. On the contrary, she cried, 'I protest I cannot guess what makes you see it in 'so ridiculous a light. I really think Mrs. Ellison 'has chosen very well. I am convinced Joe will 'make her one of the best of husbands; and in my

'opinion that is the greatest blessing a woman can 'be possessed of.'

However, when Mrs. Ellison came into her room a little while afterwards, to fetch the children, Amelia became of a more risible disposition, especially when the former, turning to Booth, who was then present, said, 'So, captain, my jantee-serjeant was very early here this morning. I 'scolded my maid heartily for letting him wait 'so long in the entry like a lacquais, when she 'might have shewn him into my inner apartment.' At which words Booth burst into a very loud laugh; and Amelia herself could no more prevent laughing than she could blushing.

'Heyday!' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'what have I said 'to cause all this mirth?' and at the same time blushed, and looked very silly, as is always the case with persons who suspect themselves to be the objects of laughter, without absolutely taking what it is which makes them ridiculous.

Booth still continued laughing; but Amelia, composing her muscles, said, 'I ask your pardon, dear 'Mrs. Ellison; but Mr. Booth hath been in a 'strange giggling humour all this morning; and 'I really think it is infectious.'

'I ask your pardon too, Madam,' cries Booth, 'but one is sometimes unaccountably foolish.'

'Nay, but seriously,' said she, 'what is the mat-'ter?—Something I said about the sergeant, I be-'lieve; but you may laugh as much as you please, 'I am not ashamed of owning, I think him one of 'the prettiest fellows I ever saw in my life; and, 'I own, I scolded my maid at suffering him to 'wait in my entry; and where is the mighty ridi-'culous matter pray?'

'None at all,' answered Booth; 'and, I hope,

'the next time he will be ushered into your inner 'apartment.'

'Why should he not, Sir?' replied she; 'for 'wherever he is ushered, I am convinced he will 'behave himself as a gentleman should.'

Here Amelia put an end to the discourse, or it might have proceeded to very great lengths; for Booth was of a waggish inclination; and Mrs. Ellison was not a lady of the nicest delicacy.

CHAP. VIII.

The heroic Behaviour of Colonel Bath.

BOOTH went this morning to pay a second visit to the colonel, where he found Colonel James. Both the colonel and the lieutenant appeared a little shocked at their first meeting; but matters were soon cleared up; for the former presently advanced to the latter, shook him heartily by the hand, and said—'Mr. Booth, I am ashamed to 'see you; for I have injured you, and I heartily 'ask your pardon. I am now perfectly con'vinced, that what I hinted to my brother, and 'which I find had like to have produced such fatal 'consequences, was entirely groundless. If you 'will be contented with my asking your pardon, 'and spare me the disagreeable remembrance of 'what led me into my error, I shall esteem it as 'the highest obligation.'

Booth answered, 'As to what regards yourself, 'my dear colonel, I am abundantly satisfied; but 'as, I am convinced, some rascal hath been my 'enemy with you in the cruelest manner, I hope

'you will not deny me the opportunity of kicking 'him through the world.'

'By all the dignity of man,' cries Colonel Bath, 'the boy speaks with spirit, and his request is rea'sonable.'

Colonel James hesitated a moment, and then whispered Booth, that he would give him all the satisfaction imaginable concerning the whole affair, when they were alone together; upon which Booth addressing himself to Colonel Bath, the discourse turned on other matters, during the remainder of the visit, which was but short, and then both went away together, leaving Colonel Bath as well as it was possible to expect, more to the satisfaction of Booth than of Colonel James, who would not have been displeased if his wound had been more dangerous; for he was grown somewhat weary of a disposition that he rather called captious than heroic, and which, as he every day more and more hated his wife, he apprehended might some time or other give him some trouble; for Bath was the most affectionate of brothers, and had often swore, in the presence of James, that he would eat any man alive who should use his sister ill.

Colonel Bath was well satisfied that his brother and the lieutenant were gone out with a design of tilting, from which he offered not a syllable to dissuade them, as he was convinced it was right, and that Booth could not in honour take, nor the colonel give, any less satisfaction. When they had been gone therefore about half an hour, he rang his bell, to inquire if there was any news of his brother; a question which he repeated every ten minutes, for the space of two hours, when having heard nothing of him, he began to conclude that both were killed on the spot.

While he was in this state of anxiety, his sister came to see him; for, notwithstanding his desire of keeping it a secret, the duel had blazed all over the town. After receiving some kind congratulations on his safety, and some unkind hints concerning the warmth of his temper, the colonel asked her, When she had seen her husband? she answered, not that morning. He then communicated to her his suspicion, told her he was convinced his brother had drawn his sword that day, and that as neither of them had heard any thing from him, he began to apprehend the worst that could happen.

Neither Miss Bellamy nor Mrs. Cibber were ever in a greater consternation on the stage, than now appeared in the countenance of Mrs. James. 'Good 'Heavens! brother,' cries she, 'what do you tell 'me! you have frightened me to death.—Let your 'man get me a glass of water immediately, if you 'have not a mind to see me die before your face. 'When, where, how was this quarrel, why did 'you not prevent it, if you knew of it? is it not 'enough to be every day tormenting me with ha'zarding your own life, but must you bring the 'life of one who you know must be, and ought to 'be, so much the dearest of all to me, into danger? 'take your sword, brother, take your sword, and 'plunge it into my bosom; it would be kinder of 'you than to fill it with such dreads and terrors.' —Here she swallowed the glass of water; and then threw herself back in her chair, as if she had intended to faint away.

Perhaps, if she had so, the colonel would have lent her no assistance; for she had hurt him more than by ten thousand stabs. He sat erect in his chair, with his eyebrows knit, his forehead wrinkled, his eyes flashing fire, his teeth grating against each other, and breathing horror all round him.

In this posture he sat for some time silent, casting disdainful looks at his sister. At last, his voice found its way through a passion which had almost choked him, and he cried out: 'Sister, what have 'I done to deserve the opinion you express of me? 'which of my actions hath made you conclude that 'I am a rascal and a coward? look at that poor 'sword, which never woman yet saw but in its 'sheath, what hath that done to merit your desire 'that it should be contaminated with the blood of a 'woman?'

'Alas! brother,' cried she, 'I know not what 'you say, you are desirous, I believe, to terrify me 'out of the little senses I have left. What can I 'have said, in the agonies of grief into which you 'threw me, to deserve this passion?'

'What have you said?' answered the colonel, 'you have said that which if a man had spoken, 'nay, d—n me, if he had but hinted that he durst 'even think, I would have made him eat my sword, 'by all the dignity of man, I would have crumbled 'his soul into powder.—But, I consider that the 'words were spoken by a woman, and I am calm 'again. Consider, my dear, that you are my sis-'ter, and behave yourself with more spirit. I have 'only mentioned to you my surmise. It may not 'have happened as I suspect; but let what will 'have happened, you will have the comfort that 'your husband hath behaved himself with becom-'ing dignity, and lies in the bed of honour.'

'Talk not to me of such comfort,' replied the lady, 'it is a loss I cannot survive. But why do I 'sit here lamenting myself; I will go this instant 'and know the worst of my fate, if my trembling 'limbs will carry me to my coach.—Good-morrow, 'dear brother; whatever becomes of me, I am glad 'to find you out of danger.'—The colonel paid her

his proper compliments, and she then left the room, but returned instantly back, saying, 'Brother, I 'must beg the favour of you to let your footman 'step to my mantua-maker; I am sure it is a miracle in my present distracted condition, how it 'came into my head.' The footman was presently summoned, and Mrs. James delivered him his message, which was, to countermand the orders which she had given that very morning, to make her up a new suit of brocade. 'Heaven knows,' says she, 'now, when I can wear brocade, or whether ever 'I shall wear it.' And now having repeated her message with great exactness, lest there should be any mistake, she again lamented her wretched situation, and then departed, leaving the colonel in full expectation of hearing speedy news of the fatal issue of the battle.

But though the reader should entertain the same curiosity, we must be excused from satisfying it, till we have first accounted for an incident which we have related in this very chapter, and which we think deserves some solution. The critic, I am convinced, already is apprized, that I mean the friendly behaviour of James to Booth, which, from what we had before recorded, seemed so little to be expected.

It must be remembered, that the anger which the former of these gentlemen had conceived against the latter, arose entirely from the false account given by Miss Matthews of Booth, whom that lady had accused to Colonel James of having as basely as wickedly traduced his character.

Now, of all the ministers of vengeance, there are none with whom the devil deals so treacherously, as with those whom he employs in executing the mischievous purposes of an angry mistress; for no sooner is revenge executed on an offending lover,

than it is sure to be repented, and all the anger which before raged against the beloved object, returns with double fury on the head of his assassin.

Miss Matthews, therefore, no sooner heard that Booth was killed (for so was the report at first, and by a colonel of the army) than she immediately concluded it to be James. She was extremely shocked with the news, and her heart instantly began to relent. All the reasons on which she had founded her love, recurred in the strongest and liveliest colours to her mind, and all the causes of her hatred sunk down and disappeared; or if the least remembrance of any thing which had disobliged her remained, her heart became his zealous advocate, and soon satisfied her that her own fates were more to be blamed than he, and that without being a villain, he could have acted no otherwise than he had done.

In this temper of mind, she looked on herself as the murderer of an innocent man, and what to her was much worse, of the man she had loved, and still did love with all the violence imaginable. She looked on James as the tool with which she had done this murder; and as it is usual for people who have rashly or inadvertently made any animate, or inanimate thing the instrument of mischief, to hate the innocent means by which the mischief was effected; (for this is a subtle method which the mind invents to excuse ourselves, the last objects on whom we would willingly wreak our vengeance;) so Miss Matthews now hated and cursed James as the efficient cause of that act which she herself had contrived, and laboured to carry into execution.

She sat down therefore in a furious agitation, little short of madness, and wrote the following letter:

'I HOPE this will find you in the hands of justice, for the murder of one of the best friends that ever man was blest with. In one sense, indeed, he may seem to have deserved his fate, by chusing a fool for a friend; for who but a fool would have believed what the anger and rage of an injured woman suggested; a story so improbable, that I could scarce be thought in earnest when I mentioned it.

'Know then, cruel wretch, that poor Booth loved you of all men breathing, and was, I believe, in your commendation, guilty of as much falsehood as I was in what I told you concerning him.

'If this knowledge makes you miserable, it is no more than you have made

'The unhappy

'F. MATTHEWS.'

CHAP. IX.

Being the last Chapter of the Fifth Book.

WE shall now return to Colonel James and Mr. Booth, who walked together from Colonel Bath's lodging with much more peaceable intention than that gentleman had conjectured, who dreamt of nothing but swords and guns, and implements of war.

The Birdcage-walk in the Park was the scene appointed by James for unburthening his mind. Thither they came, and there James acquainted Booth with all that which the reader knows already, and

gave him the letter which we have inserted at the end of the last chapter.

Booth exprest great astonishment at this relation, not without venting some detestation of the wickedness of Miss Matthews; upon which, James took him up, saying, he ought not to speak with such abhorrence of faults, which love for him had occasioned.

'Can you mention love, my dear colonel,' cried Booth, 'and such a woman in the same breath?'

'Yes, faith! can I,' says James; 'for the devil 'take me, if I know a more lovely woman in the 'world.' Here he began to describe her whole person; but as we cannot insert all the description, so we shall omit it all; and concluded with saying, 'Curse me, if I don't think her the finest creature 'in the universe. I would give half my estate, 'Booth, she loved me as well as she doth you.—'Though, on second consideration, I believe I 'should repent that bargain; for then, very possibly 'I should not care a farthing for her.'

'You will pardon me, dear colonel.' answered Booth; 'but to me there appears somewhat very 'singular in your way of thinking. Beauty is in'deed the object of liking, great qualities of admi'ration, good ones of esteem; but the devil take 'me, if I think any thing but love to be the object 'of love.'

'Is there not something too selfish,' replied James, 'in that opinion; but without considering 'it in that light, is it not of all things the most in'sipid? all oil! all sugar! zounds! it is enough 'to cloy the sharp-set appetite of a parson. Acids 'surely are the most likely to quicken.'

'I do not love reasoning in allegories,' cries Booth: 'but with regard to love, I declare I never 'found any thing cloying in it. I have lived al-

'most alone with my wife near three years toge-'ther, was never tired with her company, nor ever 'wished for any other; and, I am, sure, I never 'tasted any of the acid you mention to quicken my 'appetite.'

'This is all very extraordinary and romantic to 'me,' answered the colonel. 'If I was to be shut 'up three years with the same woman, which Hea-'ven forbid! nothing, I think, could keep me alive, 'but a temper as violent as that of Miss Matthews. 'As to love, it would make me sick to death, in the 'twentieth part of that time. If I was so con-'demned, let me see, what would I wish the wo-'man to be! I think no one virtue would be suffi-'cient. With the spirit of a tigress, I would have 'her be a prude, a scold, a scholar, a critic, a wit, 'a politician, and a jacobite; and then, perhaps, 'eternal opposition would keep up our spirits; and 'wishing one another daily at the devil, we should 'make a shift to drag on a damnable state of life, 'without much spleen or vapours.'

'And so you do not intend,' cries Booth, 'to 'break with this woman.'

'Not more than I have already, if I can help it,' answered the colonel.

'And you will be reconciled to her,' said Booth.

'Yes, faith! will I, if I can,' answered the colo-nel——'I hope you have no objection.'

'None, my dear friend,' said Booth, 'unless on 'your account.'

'I do believe you,' said the colonel; 'and yet, 'let me tell you, you are a very extraordinary man, 'not to desire me to quit her on your own account. 'Upon my soul, I begin to pity the woman, who 'hath placed her affection, perhaps, on the only 'man in England of your age, who would not re-'turn it. But for my part, I promise you, I like

'her beyond all other women; and whilst that is 'the case, my boy, if her mind was as full of ini-'quity as Pandora's box was of diseases, I'd hug 'her close in my arms, and only take as much care 'as possible to keep the lid down for fear of mis-'chief.——But come, dear Booth,' said he, 'let 'us consider your affairs; for I am ashamed of 'having neglected them so long; and the only an-'ger I have against this wench is, that she was the 'occasion of it.'

Booth then acquainted the colonel with the promises he had received from the noble lord, upon which, James shook him by the hand, and heartily wished him joy, crying, 'I do assure you if you 'have his interest, you will need no other; I did 'not know you was acquainted with him.'

To which Mr. Booth answered, 'That he was 'but a new acquaintance, and that he was recom-'mended to him by a lady.'

'A lady,' cries the colonel,—'well, I don't ask 'her name. You are a happy man, Booth, amongst 'the women; and I assure you, you could have no 'stronger recommendation. The peer loves the 'ladies, I believe, as well as ever Mark Antony 'did; and it is not his fault, if he hath not spent 'as much upon them. If he once fixes his eye 'upon a woman, he will stick at nothing to get 'her.'

'Ay, indeed!' cries Booth, 'Is that his charac-'ter?'

'Ay, faith!' answered the colonel, 'and the cha-'racter of most men besides him. Few of them, 'I mean, will stick at any thing beside their mo-'ney. Jusque à la Bourse, is sometimes the boun-'dary of love as well as friendship. And, indeed, 'I never knew any other man part with his money 'so very freely on these occasions. You see,

'dear Booth, the confidence I have in your ho-'nour.'

'I hope, indeed, you have,' cries Booth, 'but I 'don't see what instance you now give me of that 'confidence.'

'Have not I shewn you,' answered James, where 'you may carry your goods to market? I can as-'sure you, my friend, that is a secret I would not 'impart to every man in your situation, and all cir-'cumstances considered.'

'I am very sorry, Sir,' cries Booth very gravely, and turning as pale as death, 'you should entertain 'a thought of this kind. A thought which hath 'almost frozen up my blood. I am unwilling to 'believe there are such villains in the world; but 'there is none of them whom I should detest half 'so much as myself, if my own mind had ever 'suggested to me a hint of that kind. I have 'tasted of some distresses of life, and I know not 'to what greater I may be driven; but my ho-'nour, I thank Heaven, is in my own power, and 'I can boldly say to Fortune, she shall not rob me 'of it.'

'Have I not expressed that confidence, my dear 'Booth?' answered the colonel. 'And what you 'say now well justifies my opinion; for I do agree 'with you, that, considering all things, it would be 'the highest instance of dishonour.'

'Dishonour, indeed!' returned Booth. 'What! 'to prostitute my wife!—Can I think there is such 'a wretch breathing?'

'I don't know that,' said the colonel; 'but I 'am sure it was very far from my intention to in-'sinuate the least hint of any such matter to you. 'Nor can I imagine how you yourself could con-'ceive such a thought. The goods I meant were 'no other than the charming person of Miss Mat-

' thews; for whom I am convinced my lord would ' bid a swinging price against me.'

Booth's countenance greatly cleared up at this declaration, and he answered with a smile, that he hoped he need not give the colonel any assurances on that head. However, though he was satisfied with regard to the colonel's suspicions; yet some chimeras now arose in his brain, which gave him no very agreeeable sensations. What these were, the sagacious reader may probably suspect; but if he should not, we may, perhaps, have occasion to open them in the sequel. Here we will put an end to this dialogue, and to the fifth book of this history.

AMELIA.

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I.

Panegyricks on Beauty, with other grave Matters.

THE colonel and Booth walked together to the latter's lodgings; for as it was not that day in the week in which all parts of the town are indifferent, Booth could not wait on the colonel.

When they arrived in Spring-Garden, Booth, to his great surprise found no one at home but the maid. In truth, Amelia had accompanied Mrs. Ellison and her children to his lordship's; for as her little girl shewed a great unwillingness to go without her, the fond mother was easily persuaded to make one of the company.

Booth had scarce ushered the colonel up to his apartment, when a servant from Mrs. James knocked hastily at the door. The lady not meeting with her husband at her return home, began to despair of him, and performed every thing which was decent on the occasion. An apothecary was presently called with hartshorn and sal-

volatile, a doctor was sent for, and messengers were dispatched every way; amongst the rest, one was sent to inquire at the lodgings of his supposed antagonist.

The servant hearing that his master was alive and well above stairs, ran up eagerly to acquaint him with the dreadful situation in which he left his miserable lady at home, and likewise with the occasion of all her distress, saying, That his lady had been at her brother's, and had there heard that his honour was killed in a duel by Captain Booth.

The colonel smiled at this account, and bid the servant make haste back to contradict it.—And then turning to Booth, he said, 'Was there ever 'such another fellow as this brother of mine? I 'thought indeed his behaviour was somewhat odd 'at the time. I suppose he overheard me whisper 'that I would give you satisfaction, and thence 'concluded, we went together with a design of 'tilting. D—n the fellow, I begin to grow heartily sick of him, and wish I could get well rid of 'him without cutting his throat, which I sometimes apprehend he will insist on my doing, as a 'return for my getting him made a lieutenant-'colonel.'

Whilst these two gentlemen were commenting on the character of the third, Amelia and her company returned, and all presently came up stairs, not only the children, but the two ladies, laden with trinkets as if they had been come from a fair. Amelia, who had been highly delighted all the morning with the excessive pleasure which her children enjoyed, when she saw colonel James with her husband, and perceived the most manifest marks of that reconciliation which she knew had been so long and so earnestly wished by Booth, became so transported with joy, that her happiness was scarce capable

of addition. Exercise had painted her face with vermilion; and the highest good-humour had so sweetened every feature, and a vast flow of spirits had so lightened up her bright eyes, that she was all a blaze of beauty. She seemed, indeed, as Milton sublimely describes Eve,

—— Adorn'd
With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow
To make her amiable.——

Again,

Grace was in all her steps, Heaven in her eye,
In every gesture, dignity and love.

Or, as Waller sweetly, though less sublimely sings:

Sweetness, truth, and every grace,
Which time and use are wont to teach,
The eye may in a moment reach,
And read distinctly in her face.

Or to mention one poet more, and him of all the sweetest, she seemed to be the very person of whom Suckling wrote the following lines, where, speaking of Cupid, he says,

—All his lovely looks, his pleasing fires,
All his sweet motions, all his taking smiles,
All that awakes, all that inflames desires,
All that sweetly commands, all that beguiles,
He does into one pair of eyes convey,
And there begs leave that he himself may stay.

Such was Amelia at this time when she entered the room; and having paid her respects to the colonel, she went up to her husband, and cried, ‘ O, my

'dear! never were any creatures so happy as your 'little things have been this whole morning; and 'all owing to my lord's goodness; sure never was 'any thing so good-natured and so generous!'— She then made the children produce their presents, the value of which amounted to a pretty large sum; for there was a gold watch, amongst the trinkets, that cost above twenty guineas.

Instead of discovering so much satisfaction on this occasion as Amelia expected, Booth very gravely answered, 'And pray, my dear, how are we to re-'pay all these obligations to his lordship?' 'How 'can you ask so strange a question?' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'how little do you know of the soul of ge-'nerosity (for sure my cousin deserves that name,) 'when you call a few little trinkets given to children 'an obligation?' 'Indeed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'I would have stopped his hand, if it had been pos-'sible; nay, I was forced at last absolutely to re-'fuse, or I believe he would have laid a hundred 'pound out on the children; for I never saw any 'one so fond of children, which convinces me he 'is one of the best of men; but I ask your pardon, 'colonel,' said she, turning to him, 'I should not 'entertain you with these subjects, yet I know you 'have goodness enough to excuse the folly of a 'mother.'

The colonel made a very low assenting bow; and soon after they all sat down to a small repast; for the colonel had promised Booth to dine with him when they first came home together; and what he had since heard from his own house, gave him still less inclination than ever to repair thither.

But besides both these, there was a third and stronger inducement to him to pass the day with his friend; and this was the desire of passing it with his friend's wife. When the colonel had first seen

Amelia in France, she was but just recovered from a consumptive habit, and looked pale and thin; besides, his engagements with Miss Bath at that time took total possession of him, and guarded his heart from the impressions of another woman; and when he had dined with her in town, the vexations through which she had lately passed, had somewhat deadened her beauty; besides, he was then engaged, as we have seen, in a very warm pursuit of a new mistress; but now he had no such impediment; for though the reader hath just before seen his warm declarations of a passion for Miss Matthews, yet it may be remembered that he had been in possession of her for above a fortnight; and one of the happy properties of this kind of passion is, that it can with equal violence love half a dozen, or half a score, different objects at one and the same time.

But indeed such were the charms now displayed by Amelia, of which we endeavoured above to draw some faint resemblance, that perhaps no other beauty could have secured him from their influence; and here, to confess a truth in his favour, however the grave, or rather the hypocritical part of mankind may censure it, I am firmly persuaded, that to withdraw admiration from exquisite beauty, or to feel no delight in gazing at it, is as impossible as to feel no warmth from the most scorching rays of the sun. To run away is all that is in our power; and in the former case, if it must be allowed we have the power of running away, it must be allowed also, that it requires the strongest resolution to execute it; for when, as Dryden says,

> All Paradise is opened in a face,

how natural is the desire of going thither! and how difficult to quit the lovely prospect!

And yet however difficult this may be, my young readers, it is absolutely necessary, and that immediately too; flatter not yourselves that fire will not scorch as well as warm, and the longer we stay within its reach, the more we shall burn. The admiration of a beautiful woman, though the wife of our dearest friend, may at first perhaps be innocent; but let us not flatter ourselves it will always remain so; desire is sure to succeed; and wishes, hopes, designs, with a long train of mischiefs, tread close at our heels. In affairs of this kind we may most properly apply the well known remark of *nemo repente fuit turpissimus*. It fares, indeed, with us on this occasion, as with the unwary traveller in some parts of Arabia, the desert, whom the treacherous sands imperceptibly betray till he is overwhelmed and lost. In both cases the only safety is by withdrawing our feet the very first moment we perceive them sliding.

This digression may appear impertinent to some readers; we could not, however, avoid the opportunity of offering the above hints; since of all passions there is none against which we should so strongly fortify ourselves as this, which is generally called love; for no other lays before us, especially in the tumultuous days of youth, such sweet, such strong, and almost irresistible temptations; none hath produced in private life such fatal and lamentable tragedies; and what is worst of all, there is none to whose poison and infatuation the best of minds are so liable. Ambition scarce ever produces any evil, but when it reigns in cruel and savage bosoms; and avarice seldom flourishes at all but in the basest and poorest soil. Love, on the contrary, sprouts usually up in the richest and noblest minds;

but there, unless nicely watched, pruned and cultivated, and carefully kept clear of those vicious weeds which are too apt to surround it, it branches forth into wildness and disorder, produces nothing desirable, but chokes up and kills whatever is good and noble in the mind where it so abounds. In short, to drop the allegory, not only tenderness and good-nature, but bravery, generosity, and every virtue are often made the instruments of effecting the most atrocious purposes of this all-subduing tyrant.

CHAP. II.

Which will not appear, we presume, unnatural to all married Readers.

IF the table of poor Booth afforded but an indifferent repast to the colonel's hunger, here was most excellent entertainment of a much higher kind. The colonel began now to wonder within himself at his not having before discovered such incomparable beauty and excellence. This wonder was indeed so natural, that lest it should arise likewise in the reader, we thought proper to give the solution of it in the preceding chapter.

During the first two hours, the colonel scarce ever had his eyes off from Amelia; for he was taken by surprise, and his heart was gone before he suspected himself to be in any danger. His mind, however, no sooner suggested a certain secret to him, than it suggested some degree of prudence to him at the same time; and the knowledge that he had thoughts to conceal, and the care of concealing

them, had birth at one and the same instant. During the residue of the day, therefore, he grew more circumspect, and contented himself with now and then stealing a look by chance, especially as the more than ordinary gravity of Booth made him fear, that his former behaviour had betrayed to Booth's observation the great and sudden liking he had conceived for his wife, even before he had observed it n himself.

Amelia continued the whole day in the highest spirits and highest good humour imaginable; never once remarking that appearance of discontent in her husband, of which the colonel had taken notice; so much more quick-sighted, as we have somewhere else hinted, is guilt than innocence. Whether Booth had in reality made any such observations on the colonel's behaviour as he had suspected, we will not undertake to determine; yet so far may be material to say, as we can with sufficient certainty, that the change in Booth's behaviour that day, from what was usual with him, was remarkable enough. None of his former vivacity appeared in his conversation; and his countenance was altered from being the picture of sweetness and good-humour, not indeed to sourness or moroseness, but to gravity and melancholy.

Though the colonel's suspicion had the effect which we have mentioned on his behaviour; yet it could not persuade him to depart. In short, he sat in his chair as if confined to it by enchantment, stealing looks now and then, and humouring his growing passion, without having command enough over his limbs to carry him out of the room, till decency at last forced him to put an end to his preposterous visit. When the husband and wife were left alone together, the latter resumed the subject of her children, and gave Booth a particular narrative of all

that had passed at his lordship's, which he, though something had certainly disconcerted him, affected to receive with all the pleasure he could; and this affectation, however awkwardly he acted his part, passed very well on Amelia; for she could not well conceive a displeasure, of which she had not the least hint of any cause; and, indeed, at a time, when, from his reconciliation with James, she imagined her husband to be entirely and perfectly happy.

The greatest part of that night Booth past awake; and if during the residue he might be said to sleep, he could scarce be said to enjoy repose; his eyes were no sooner closed, than he was pursued and haunted by the most frightful and terrifying dreams, which threw him into so restless a condition, that he soon disturbed his Amelia, and greatly alarmed her with apprehensions that he had been seized by some dreadful disease, though he had not the least symptoms of a fever by any extraordinary heat, or any other indication, but was rather colder than usual.

As Booth assured his wife that he was very well, but found no inclination to sleep, she likewise bid adieu to her slumbers, and attempted to entertain him with her conversation. Upon which his lordship occurred as the first topic; and she repeated to him all the stories which she had heard from Mrs. Ellison, of the peer's goodness to his sister and his nephew and niece. 'It is impossible, my dear,' says she, 'to describe their fondness for their uncle, 'which is to me an incontestible sign of a parent's 'goodness.'—In this manner she ran on for several minutes, concluding at last, that it was pity so very few had such generous minds joined to immense fortunes.

Booth, instead of making a direct answer to what

Amelia had said, cried coldly, 'But do you think, 'my dear, it was right to accept all those expensive 'toys which the children brought home? And I 'ask you again, what return are we to make for 'these obligations?'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you see this 'matter in too serious a light. Though I am the 'last person in the world who would lessen his 'lordship's goodness (indeed I shall always think 'we are both infinitely obliged to him); yet sure 'you must allow the expense to be a mere trifle 'to such a vast fortune. As for return, his own 'benevolence, in the satisfaction it receives, more 'than repays itself, and I am convinced he expects 'no other.'

'Very well, my dear,' cries Booth, 'you shall 'have it your way; I must confess I never yet 'found any reason to blame your discernment; and 'perhaps I have been in the wrong to give myself 'so much uneasiness on this account.'

'Uneasiness! child,' said Amelia eagerly. 'Good 'Heavens! hath this made you uneasy?'

'I do own it hath,' answered Booth, 'and it hath 'been the only cause of breaking my repose.'

'Why then I wish,' cries Amelia, 'all the things 'had been at the devil, before ever the children had 'seen them; and whatever I may think myself, I 'promise you, they shall never more accept the 'value of a farthing—If, upon this occasion, I 'have been the cause of your uneasiness, you will 'do me the justice to believe that I was totally in-'nocent.'

At those words Booth caught her in his arms, and with the tenderest embrace, emphatically repeating the word innocent, cried—'Heaven forbid I should 'think otherwise! O, thou art the best of creatures 'that ever blessed a man!'

'Well but,' said she, smiling—'Do confess, my 'dear, the truth; I promise you I won't blame you 'nor disesteem you for it; but is not pride really 'at the bottom of this fear of an obligation?'

'Perhaps it may,' answered he, 'or if you will, 'you may call it fear. I own I am afraid of obli-'gations, as the worst kind of debts; for I have ge-'nerally observed those who confer them, expect 'to be repaid ten thousand fold.'

Here ended all that is material of their discourse; and a little time afterwards, they both fell fast asleep in one another's arms; from which time Booth had no more restlessness, nor any further perturbation in his dreams.

Their repose, however, had been so much disturbed in the former part of the night, that, as it was very late before they enjoyed that sweet sleep I have just mentioned, they lay abed the next day till noon, when they both rose with the utmost cheerfulness; and while Amelia bestirred herself in the affairs of her family, Booth went to visit the wounded colonel.

He found that gentleman still proceeding very fast in his recovery, with which he was more pleased than he had reason to be with his reception; for the colonel received him very coldly indeed, and when Booth told him, he had received perfect satisfaction from his brother, Bath erected his head, and answered with a sneer, 'Very well, Sir, if you 'think these matters can be so made up, d—n me, 'if it is any business of mine. My dignity hath not 'been injured.'

'No one, I believe,' cries Booth, 'dare injure 'it.'

'You believe so!' said the colonel; 'I think, 'Sir, you might be assured of it; but this, at least, 'you may be assured of, that if any man did, I would

'tumble him down the precipice of hell, d—n me, 'that you may be assured of.'

As Booth found the colonel in this disposition, he had no great inclination to lengthen out his visit, nor did the colonel himself seem to desire it; so he soon returned back to his Amelia, whom he found performing the office of a cook, with as much pleasure as a fine lady generally enjoys in dressing herself out for a ball.

CHAP. III.

In which the History looks a little backwards.

BEFORE we proceed farther in our history, we shall recount a short scene to our reader which passed between Amelia and Mrs. Ellison, whilst Booth was on his visit to Colonel Bath. We have already observed, that Amelia had conceived an extraordinary affection for Mrs. Bennet, which had still increased every time she saw her; she thought she discovered something wonderfully good and gentle in her countenance and disposition, and was very desirous of knowing her whole history.

She had a very short interview with that lady this morning in Mrs. Ellison's apartment. As soon, therefore, as Mrs. Bennet was gone, Amelia acquainted Mrs. Ellison with the good opinion she had conceived of her friend, and likewise with her curiosity to know her story: 'For there must be 'something uncommonly good,' said she, 'in one 'who can so truly mourn for a husband above three 'years after his death.'

'O!' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'to be sure the world

'must allow her to have been one of the best of 'wives. And indeed, upon the whole, she is a 'good sort of woman; and what I like her the best 'for, is a strong resemblance that she bears to your-'self in the form of her person, and still more in 'her voice. But for my own part, I know nothing 'remarkable in her fortune, unless what I have 'told you, that she was the daughter of a clergy-'man, had little or no fortune, and married a poor 'parson for love, who left her in the utmost distress. 'If you please, I will shew you a letter which she 'writ to me at that time, though I insist upon your 'promise never to mention it to her; indeed, you 'will be the first person I ever shewed it to.' She then opened her scrutoire, and taking out the letter, delivered it to Amelia, saying, 'There, Madam, is 'I believe, as fine a picture of distress as can well 'be drawn.'

'DEAR MADAM,

'As I have no other friend on earth but yourself, 'I hope you will pardon my writing to you at this 'season; though I do not know that you can re-'lieve my distresses, or if you can, have I any pre-'tence to expect that you should. My poor dear, 'O Heavens—my——lies dead in the house; and 'after I had procured sufficient to bury him, a set 'of ruffians have entered my house, seized all I 'have, have seized his dear, dear corpse, and threat-'en to deny it burial. For Heaven's sake, send me, 'at least, some advice; little Tommy stands now 'by me crying for bread, which I have not to give 'him.—I can say no more than that I am, Your 'most distressed humble servant,

'M. BENNET.'

Amelia read the letter over twice, and then returning it, with tears in her eyes, asked how the poor creature could possibly get through such distress.

'You may depend upon it, Madam,' said Mrs. Ellison, 'the moment I read this account, I posted 'away immediately to the lady. As to the seizing 'the body, that I found was a mere bugbear; but 'all the rest was literally true. I sent immediately 'for the same gentleman, that I recommended to 'Mr. Booth, left the care of burying the corpse to 'him, and brought my friend and her little boy 'immediately away to my own house, where she 'remained some months in the most miserable condition. I then prevailed with her to retire into 'the country, and procured her a lodging with a 'friend at St. Edmundsbury, the air and gaiety of 'which place by degrees recovered her; and she 'returned in about a twelvemonth to town, as well, 'I think, as she is at present.'

'I am almost afraid to ask,' cries Amelia; 'and 'yet I long methinks to know what is become of 'the poor little boy.'

'He hath been dead,' said Mrs. Ellison, 'a little 'more than half a year; and the mother lamented 'him at first almost as much as she did her husband; 'but I found it indeed rather an easier matter to 'comfort her, though I sat up with her near a fort'night upon the latter occasion.'

'You are a good creature,' said Amelia, 'and I 'love you dearly.'

'Alas! Madam,' cries she, 'what could I have 'done, if it had not been for the goodness of that 'best of man, my noble cousin! His lordship no 'sooner heard of the widow's distress from me, than 'he immediately settled one hundred and fifty 'pounds a year upon her during her life.'

'Well! how noble, how generous was that!' said Amelia. 'I declare I begin to love your cousin, Mrs. 'Ellison.'

'And I declare if you do,' answered she, 'there 'is no love lost, I verily believe; if you had heard 'what I heard him say yesterday behind your 'back——'

'Why, what did he say, Mrs. Ellison?' cries Amelia.

'He said,' answered the other, 'that you was 'the finest woman his eyes ever beheld.—Ah! it 'is in vain to wish. and yet I cannot help wishing 'too.—O Mrs. Booth! if you had been a single 'woman, I firmly believe I could have made you 'the happiest in the world. And I sincerely think 'I never saw a woman who deserved it more.'

'I am obliged to you, Madam,' cries Amelia, 'for your good opinion; but I really look on my- 'self already as the happiest woman in the world. 'Our circumstances, it is true, might have been a 'little more fortunate; but, O my dear Mrs. Elli- 'son! what fortune can be put in the balance with 'such a husband as mine?'

'I am afraid, dear Madam,' answered Mrs. Ellison, 'you would not hold the scale fairly.—I ac- 'knowledge indeed Mr. Booth is a very pretty 'gentleman; Heaven forbid I should endeavour to 'lessen him in your opinion; yet, if I was to be 'brought to confession, I could not help saying, I 'see where the superiority lies, and that the men 'have more reason to envy Mr. Booth, than the wo- 'men have to envy his lady.'

'Nay, I will not bear this,' replied Amelia. 'You will forfeit all my love, if you have the least 'disrespectful opinion of my husband.—You do 'not know him, Mrs. Ellison, he is the best, the 'kindest, the worthiest of all his sex. I have ob-

'served, indeed, once or twice before, that you 'have taken some dislike to him. I cannot con-'ceive for what reason. If he hath said or done 'any thing to disoblige you, I am sure I can justly 'acquit him of design. His extreme vivacity 'makes him sometimes a little too heedless; but 'I am convinced, a more innocent heart, or one 'more void of offence, was never in a human 'bosom.'

'Nay, if you grow serious,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'I have done. How is it possible you should 'suspect I had taken any dislike to a man, to 'whom I have always shewn so perfect a regard! 'but to say I think of him, or almost any other man 'in the world, worthy of yourself, is not within 'my power with truth. And since you force the 'confession from me, I declare, I think such 'beauty, such sense, and such goodness united, 'might aspire without vanity to the arms of any 'monarch in Europe.'

'Alas! my dear Mrs. Ellison,' answered Amelia, 'do you think happiness and a crown so closely 'united? how many miserable women have lain 'in the arms of kings?—Indeed, Mrs. Ellison, if 'I had all the merit you compliment me with, I 'should think it all fully rewarded with such a 'man as, I thank Heaven, hath fallen to my lot; 'nor would I, upon my soul, exchange that lot 'with any queen in the universe.'

'Well, there are enow of our sex,' said Mrs. Ellison, 'to keep you in countenance; but I shall 'never forget the beginning of a song of Mr. 'Congreve's, that my husband was so fond of, 'that he was always singing it.

'Love's but a frailty of the mind,
'When 'tis not with ambition join'd.

'Love without interest makes but an unsavoury 'dish in my opinion.'

'And pray how long hath this been your opi-'nion?' said Amelia, smiling.

'Ever since I was born,' answered Mrs. Ellison, 'at least, ever since I can remember.'

'And have you never,' said Amelia, 'deviated 'from this generous way of thinking?'

'Never once,' answered the other, 'in the 'whole course of my life.'

'O Mrs. Ellison! Mrs. Ellison!' cries Amelia, 'why do we ever blame those who are disingenuous 'in confessing their faults, when we are so often 'ashamed to own ourselves in the right. Some 'women now, in my situation, would be angry 'that you had not made confidantes of them; but 'I never desire to know more of the secrets of 'others, than they are pleased to intrust me with. 'You must believe, however, that I should not 'have given you these hints of my knowing all, if 'I had disapproved of your choice. On the con-'trary, I assure you, I highly approve it. The 'gentility he wants, it will be easy in your power 'to procure for him; and as for his good qualities, 'I will myself be bound for them; and I make 'not the least doubt, as you have owned to me 'yourself, that you have placed your affections 'on him, you will be one of the happiest women 'in the world.'

'Upon my honour,' cries Mrs. Ellison, very gravely, 'I do not understand one word of what 'you mean.'

'Upon my honour,' you astonish me,' said Amelia; 'but I have done.'

'Nay then,' said the other, 'I insist upon know-'ing what you mean.'

'Why, what can I mean,' answered Amelia, 'but your marriage with sergeant Atkinson?'

'With sergeant Atkinson!' cries Mrs. Ellison eagerly, 'my marriage with a sergeant?'

'Well, with Mr. Atkinson then, Captain Atkinson, if you please; for so I hope to see him.'

'And have you really no better opinion of me,' said Mrs. Ellison, 'than to imagine me capable of such condescension! What have I done, dear Mrs. Booth, to deserve so low a place in your esteem? I find, indeed, as Solomon says, *Women ought to watch the door of their lips*. How little did I imagine that a little harmless freedom in discourse, could persuade any one that I could entertain a serious intention of disgracing my family! for of a very good family am I come, I assure you, Madam, though I now let lodgings. Few of my lodgers, I believe, ever came of a better.'

'If I have offended you, Madam,' said Amelia, 'I am very sorry, and ask your pardon; but besides what I heard from yourself, Mr. Booth told me——'

'O yes!' answered Mrs. Ellison, 'Mr. Booth, I know is a very good friend of mine.—Indeed, I know you better than to think it could be your own suspicion.—I am very much obliged to Mr. Booth truly.'

'Nay,' cries Amelia, 'the sergeant himself is in fault; for Mr. Booth, I am positive, only repeated what he had from him.'

'Impudent coxcomb!' cries Mrs. Ellison. 'I shall know how to keep such fellows at a proper distance for the future—I will tell you, dear Madam, all that happened. When I rose in the morning, I found the fellow waiting in the entry; and as you had exprest some regard for him as

'your foster-brother, nay, he is a very genteel 'fellow, that I must own, I scolded my maid for 'not shewing him into my little back-room; and 'I then asked him to walk into the parlour. 'Could I have imagined he would have construed 'such little civility into an encouragement.'

'Nay, I will have justice done to my poor 'brother too,' said Amelia. 'I myself have seen 'you give him much greater encouragement than 'that.'

'Well, perhaps, I have,' said Mrs. Ellison. 'I 'have been always too unguarded in my speech, 'and cannot answer for all I have said.' She then began to change her note, and with an affected laugh, turned all into ridicule; and soon afterwards the two ladies separated, both in apparent good-humour; and Amelia went about those domestic offices in which Mr. Booth found her engaged at the end of the preceding chapter.

CHAP. IV.

Containing a very extraordinary Incident.

IN the afternoon, Mr. Booth, with Amelia and her children, went to refresh themselves in the Park. The conversation now turned on what past in the morning with Mrs. Ellison, the latter part of the dialogue, I mean, recorded in the last chapter. Amelia told her husband, that Mrs. Ellison so strongly denied all intentions to marry the sergeant, that she had convinced her the poor fellow was under an error, and had mistaken a little too much levity for serious encouragement; and con-

cluded, by desiring Booth not to jest with her any more on that subject.

Booth burst into a laugh, at what his wife said. ‘ My dear creature,’ said he, ‘ how easy is thy ‘ honesty and simplicity to be imposed on ! how ‘ little dost thou guess at the art and falsehood of ‘ women ! I knew a young lady, who, against her ‘ father's consent, was married to a brother officer ‘ of mine. And as I often used to walk with her ‘ (for I knew her father intimately well), she would ‘ of her own accord take frequent occasions to ‘ ridicule and vilify her husband (for so he was at ‘ the time), and exprest great wonder and indig- ‘ nation at the report which she allowed to pre- ‘ vail, that she should condescend ever to look at ‘ such a fellow, with any other design than of ‘ laughing at and despising him. The marriage ‘ afterwards became publickly owned, and the lady ‘ was reputably brought to bed. Since which, I ‘ have often seen her; not hath she ever appeared ‘ to be in the least ashamed of what she had for- ‘ merly said, though, indeed, I believe she hates ‘ me heartily for having heard it.’

‘ But for what reason,’ cries Amelia, ‘ should she ‘ deny a fact, when she must be so certain of our ‘ discovering it, and that immediately ?’

‘ I cannot answer what end she may propose,’ said Booth. ‘ Sometimes one would be almost per- ‘ suaded that there was a pleasure in lying itself. ‘ But this I am certain, that I would believe the ‘ honest sergeant on his bare word, sooner than I ‘ would fifty Mrs. Ellisons on oath. I am con- ‘ vinced he would not have said what he did to me, ‘ without the strongest encouragement; and I ‘ think, after what we have been both witnesses to, ‘ it requires no great confidence in his veracity, to

'give him an unlimited credit with regard to the 'lady's behaviour.'

To this Amelia made no reply; and they discoursed of other matters during the remainder of a very pleasant walk.

When they returned home, Amelia was surprised to find an appearance of disorder in her apartment. Several of the trinkets, which his lordship had given the children, lay about the room; and a suit of her own clothes, which she had left in her drawers, was now displayed upon the bed.

She immediately summoned her little girl up stairs, who, as she plainly perceived the moment she came up with a candle, had half cried her eyes out; for though the girl had opened the door to them, as it was almost dark, she had not taken any notice of this phænomenon in her countenance.

The girl now fell down upon her knees, and cried,—'For Heaven's sake, Madam, do not be 'angry with me. Indeed, I was left alone in the 'house; and hearing somebody knock at the door, 'I opened it, I am sure thinking no harm. I did 'not know but it might have been you, or my 'master, or madam Ellison; and immediately as 'I did, the rogue burst in and ran directly up 'stairs, and what he hath robbed you of I cannot 'tell; but I am sure I could not help it; for he 'was a great swinging man, with a pistol in each 'hand; and, if I had dared to call out, to be sure 'he would have killed me. I am sure I was never 'in such a fright in my born days, whereof I am 'hardly come to myself yet. I believe he is some-'where about the house yet; for I never saw him 'go out.'

Amelia discovered some little alarm at this nar-

rative, but much less than many other ladies would have shewn; for a fright is, I believe, some time laid hold of as an opportunity of disclosing several charms peculiar to that occasion. And which, as Mr. Addison says of certain virtues,

——Shun the day, and lie conceal'd
In the smooth seasons, and the calms of life.

Booth having opened the window, and summoned in two chairmen to his assistance, proceeded to search the house; but all to no purpose; the thief was flown, though the poor girl, in her state of terror, had not seen him escape.

But now a circumstance appeared which greatly surprized both Booth and Amelia; indeed, I believe it will have the same effect on the reader; and this was, that the thief had taken nothing with him. He had, indeed, tumbled over all Booth's and Amelia's clothes, and the children's toys, but had left all behind him.

Amelia was scarce more pleased than astonished at this discovery, and re-examined the girl, assuring her of an absolute pardon, if she confessed the truth, but grievously threatening her if she was found guilty of the least falsehood. 'As for a 'thief, child,' says she, 'that is certainly not 'true; you have had somebody with you, to 'whom you have been shewing the things; there'fore tell me plainly who it was.'

The girl protested in the solemnest manner that she knew not the person; but as to some circumstances she began to vary a little from her first account, particularly as to the pistols; concerning which, being strictly examined by Booth, she at last cried—'To be sure, Sir, he must have had 'pistols about him.' And instead of persisting in

his having rushed in upon her, she now confessed, that he had asked at the door for her master and mistress; and that at his desire she had shewn him up stairs, where he at first said he would stay till their return home; 'but, indeed,' cried she, 'I 'thought no harm; for he looked like a gentleman-'like sort of a man. And, indeed, so I thought 'he was for a good while, whereof he sat down and 'behaved himself very civilly, till he saw some of 'master's and miss's things upon the chest of 'drawers; whereof he cried, "Heyday! what's 'here?" and then he fell to tumbling about the 'things like any mad. Then I thinks, thinks I 'to myself, to be sure he is a highwayman, whereof 'I did not dare to speak to him; for I knew ma-'dam Ellison and her maid was gone out, and 'what could such a poor girl as I do against a 'great strong man? and besides, thinks I, to be 'sure he hath got pistols about him, though I can-'not indeed (that I will not do for the world) 'take my Bible-oath that I saw any; yet to be 'sure he would have soon pulled them out and 'shot me dead, if I had ventured to have said any 'thing to offend him.'

'I know not what to make of this,' cries Booth. 'The poor girl, I verily believe, speaks to the best 'of her knowledge. A thief it could not be; for 'he hath not taken the least thing; and it is plain 'he had the girl's watch in his hand.—If it had 'been a bailiff, surely he would have staid till our 'return. I can conceive no other from the girl's 'account, than that it must have been some mad-'man.—

'O good Sir!' said the girl, 'now you men-'tion it, if he was not a thief, to be sure he must 'have been a madman; for indeed he looked, and 'behaved himself too, very much like a madman:

'for now I remember it, he talked to himself, and 'said many strange kind of words that I did not 'understand. Indeed, he looked altogether as I 'have seen people in Bedlam; besides, if he was 'not a madman, what good could it do him to 'throw the things all about the room, in such a 'manner? and he said something too about my 'master, just before he went down stairs; I was 'in such a fright, I cannot remember particularly; 'but I am sure they were very ill words; he said 'he would do for him, I am sure he said that, and 'other wicked bad words too, if I could but think 'of them.'

'Upon my word,' said Booth, 'this is the most 'probable conjecture; but still I am puzzled to 'conceive who it should be; for I have no mad-'man to my knowledge of my acquaintance; and 'it seems, as the girl says, he asked for me.' He then turned to the child, and asked her if she was certain of that circumstance.

The poor maid, after a little hesitation, answered, 'Indeed, Sir, I cannot be very positive; 'for the fright he threw me into afterwards, drove 'every thing almost out of my mind.'

'Well, whatever he was,' cries Amelia, 'I am 'glad the consequence is no worse; but let this 'be a warning to you, little Betty, and teach you 'to take more care for the future. If ever you 'should be left alone in the house again, be sure 'to let no persons in, without first looking out at 'the window, and seeing who they are. I promised 'not to chide you any more on this occasion, and 'I will keep my word; but it is very plain you 'desired this person to walk up into our apart-'ment, which was very wrong in our absence.'

Betty was going to answer—but Amelia would not let her, saying, 'Don't attempt to excuse

'yourself; for I mortally hate a liar, and can for-'give any fault sooner than falsehood.'

The poor girl then submitted; and now Amelia, with her assistance, began to replace all things in their order; and little Emily, hugging her watch with great fondness, declared she would never part with it any more.

Thus ended this odd adventure, not entirely to the satisfaction of Booth; for besides his curiosity, which, when thoroughly roused, is a very troublesome passion, he had, as is, I believe, usual with all persons in his circumstances, several doubts and apprehensions of he knew not what. Indeed, fear is never more uneasy than when it doth not certainly know its object; for on such occasions the mind is ever employed in raising a thousand bugbears and phantoms, much more dreadful than any realities, and like children when they tell tales of hobgoblins, seems industrious in terrifying itself.

CHAP. V.

Containing some Matters not very unnatural.

MATTERS were scarce sooner reduced into order and decency, than a violent knocking was heard at the door, such indeed as would have persuaded any one not accustomed to the sound, that the madman was returned in the highest spring-tide of his fury.

Instead, however, of so disagreeable an appearance, a very fine lady presently came into the room, no other, indeed, than Mrs. James herself; for she was resolved to shew Amelia, by the speedy

return of her visit, how unjust all her accusations had been of any failure in the duties of friendship; she had moreover another reason to accelerate this visit, and that was, to congratulate her friend on the event of the duel between Colonel Bath and Mr. Booth.

The lady had so well profited by Mrs. Booth's remonstrance, that she had now no more of that stiffness and formality which she had worn on a former occasion. On the contrary, she now behaved with the utmost freedom and good-humour, and made herself so very agreeable, that Amelia was highly pleased and delighted with her company.

An incident happened during this visit, that may appear to some too inconsiderable in itself to be recorded; and yet, as it certainly produced a very strong consequence in the mind of Mr. Booth, we cannot prevail on ourselves to pass it by.

Little Emily, who was present in the room while Mrs. James was there, as she stood near that lady, happened to be playing with her watch, which she was so greatly overjoyed had escaped safe from the madman. Mrs. James, who exprest great fondness for the child, desired to see the watch, which she commended as the prettiest of the kind she had ever seen.

Amelia caught eager hold of this opportunity to spread the praises of her benefactor. She presently acquainted Mrs. James with the donor's name, and ran on with great encomiums on his lordship's goodness, and particularly on his generosity. To which Mrs. James answered, 'O! certainly, Ma-'dam, his lordship hath universally the character 'of being extremely generous—where he likes.'

In uttering these words, she laid a very strong emphasis on the three last monosyllables, accom-

panying them at the same time with a very sagacious look, a very significant leer, and a great flirt with her fan.

The greatest genius the world hath ever produced, observes in one of his most excellent plays, that

——Trifles, light as air,
Are to the jealous confirmations strong
As proofs of holy writ.

That Mr. Booth began to be possessed by this worst of fiends, admits, I think, no longer doubt; for at this speech of Mrs. James, he immediately turned pale, and from a high degree of cheerfulness, was all on a sudden struck dumb, so that he spoke not another word till Mrs. James left the room.

The moment that lady drove from the door, Mrs. Ellison came up stairs. She entered the room with a laugh, and very plentifully rallied both Booth and Amelia concerning the madman, of which she had received a full account below stairs; and at last asked Amelia, if she could not guess who it was; but without receiving an answer, went on, saying, ‘For my own part, I fancy it ‘must be some lover of yours; some person that ‘hath seen you, and so is run mad with love. Indeed, I should not wonder if all mankind were ‘to do the same. La! Mr. Booth, what makes ‘you grave? why you are as melancholy as if you ‘had been robbed in earnest. Upon my word, ‘though, to be serious, it is a strange story; and ‘as the girl tells it, I know not what to make of ‘it. Perhaps it might be some rogue that intended ‘to rob the house, and his heart failed him: yet

'even that would be very extraordinary. What 'did you lose nothing, Madam?'

'Nothing at all,' answered Amelia. 'He did 'not even take the child's watch.'

'Well, captain,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'I hope you 'will take more care of the house to-morrow; for 'your lady and I shall leave you alone to the care 'of it. Here, Madam,' said she, 'here is a pre'sent from my lord to us; here are two tickets 'for the masquerade at Ranelagh. You will be so 'charmed with it! It is the sweetest of all diver'sions.'

'May I be damned, Madam,' cries Booth, 'if 'my wife shall go thither.'

Mrs. Ellison started at these words, and, indeed, so did Amelia; for they were spoke with great vehemence. At length the former cried out with an air of astonishment, 'Not let your lady go to 'Ranelagh, Sir?'

'No, Madam,' cries Booth, 'I will not let my 'wife go to Ranelagh.'

'You surprise me,' cries Mrs. Ellison. 'Sure 'you are not in earnest.'

'Indeed, Madam,' returned he, 'I am seriously 'in earnest. And what is more, I am convinced 'she would of her own accord refuse to go.'

'Now, Madam,' said Mrs. Ellison, 'you are 'to answer for yourself; and I will for your hus'band, that, if you have a desire to go, he will not 'refuse you.'

'I hope, Madam,' answered Amelia with great gravity, 'I shall never desire to go to any place 'contrary to Mr. Booth's inclinations.'

'Did ever mortal hear the like?' said Mrs. Ellison; 'you are enough to spoil the best husband in 'the universe. Inclinations! what, is a woman to

'be governed then by her husband's inclinations, 'though they are never so unreasonable?'

'Pardon me, Madam,' said Amelia, 'I will not 'suppose Mr. Booth's inclinations ever can be un-'reasonable. I am very much obliged to you for 'the offer you have made me; but I beg you will 'not mention it any more; for, after what Mr. 'Booth hath declared, if Ranelagh was a Heaven 'upon earth, I would refuse to go to it.'

'I thank you, my dear,' cries Booth; 'I do as-'sure you, you oblige me beyond my power of ex-'pression by what you say; but I will endeavour 'to shew you, both my sensibility of such goodness, 'and my lasting gratitude to it.'

'And pray, Sir,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'what can 'be your objection to your lady's going to a place, 'which, I will venture to say, is as reputable as any 'about town, and which is frequented by the best 'company?'

'Pardon me, good Mrs. Ellison,' said Booth.—'As my wife is so good to acquiesce without know-'ing my reasons, I am not, I think, obliged to as-'sign them to any other person.'

'Well,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'if I had been told 'this, I would not have believed it. What, refuse 'your lady an innocent diversion, and that too when 'you have not the pretence to say it would cost 'you a farthing?'

'Why will you say any more on this subject, 'dear Madam?' cries Amelia. 'All diversions are 'to me matters of such indifference, that the bare 'inclinations of any one for whom I have the least 'value, would at all times turn the balance of mine. 'I am sure then after what Mr. Booth hath said—

'My dear,' cries he, taking her up hastily, 'I 'sincerely ask your pardon, I spoke inadvertently, 'and in a passion—I never once thought of con-

'trolling you—nor ever would.—Nay, I said in the 'same breath you would not go; and, upon my 'honour, I meant nothing more.'

'My dear,' said she, 'you have no need of mak-'ing any apology. I am not in the least offended, 'and am convinced you will never deny me what I 'shall desire.'

'Try him, try him, Madam,' cries Mrs. Ellison; 'I will be judged by all the women in town, if it 'is possible for a wife to ask her husband any thing 'more reasonable. You cannot conceive what a 'sweet, charming, elegant, delicious place it is.—'Paradise itself can hardly be equal to it.'

'I beg you will excuse me, Madam,' said Amelia; 'nay, I entreat you will ask me no more; for 'be assured I must and will refuse—Do let me de-'sire you to give the ticket to poor Mrs. Bennet. 'I believe it would greatly oblige her.'——

'Pardon me, Madam,' said Mrs. Ellison. 'If 'you will not accept of it, I am not so distressed for 'want of company as to go to such a public place 'with all sorts of people, neither. I am always 'very glad to see Mrs. Bennet at my own house; 'because I look upon her as a very good sort of 'woman; but I don't chuse to be seen with such 'people in public places.'

Amelia exprest some little indignation at this last speech, which she declared to be entirely beyond her comprehension; and soon after Mrs. Ellison, finding all her efforts to prevail on Amelia were ineffectual, took her leave, giving Mr. Booth two or three sarcastical words, and a much more sarcastical look at her departure.

CHAP. VI.

A Scene in which some Ladies will possibly think Amelia's Conduct exceptionable.

BOOTH and his wife being left alone, a solemn silence prevailed during a few minutes. At last, Amelia, who though a good, was yet a human creature, said to her husband, ' Pray, my dear, do in-' form me, what could put you into so great a pas-' sion when Mrs. Ellison first offered me the tickets ' for this masquerade?'

' I had rather you would not ask me,' said Booth. ' You have obliged me greatly in your ready ac-' quiescence with my desire, and you will add ' greatly to the obligation by not inquiring the rea-' son of it. This you may depend upon, Amelia, ' that your good and happiness are the great objects ' of all my wishes, and the end I propose in all my ' actions. This view alone could tempt me to re-' fuse you any thing, or to conceal any thing from ' you.'

' I will appeal to yourself,' answered she, ' whe-' ther this be not using me too much like a child, ' and whether I can possibly help being a little of-' fended at it?'

' Not in the least,' replied he, ' I use you only ' with the tenderness of a friend. I would only en-' deavour to conceal that from you, which I think ' would give you uneasiness if you knew. These ' are called the pious frauds of friendship.'

' I detest all fraud,' says she; ' and pious is too ' good an epithet to be joined to so odious a word. ' You have often, you know, tried these frauds with ' no better effect than to tease and torment me.—

'You cannot imagine, my dear, but that I must 'have a violent desire to know the reason of words 'which, I own, I never expected to have heard.— 'And the more you have shewn a reluctance to tell 'me, the more eagerly I have longed to know.— 'Nor can this be called a vain curiosity; since I 'seem so much interested in this affair. If after all 'this, you still insist on keeping the secret, I will 'convince you I am not ignorant of the duty of a 'wife, by my obedience; but I cannot help telling 'you, at the same time, you will make me one of 'the most miserable of women.'

'That is,' cries he, 'in other words, my dear 'Emily, to say, I will be contented without the 'secret; but I am resolved, to know it, neverthe-'less.'

'Nay, if you say so,' cries she, 'I am convinced 'you will tell me—Positively, dear Billy, I must 'and will know.'

'Why, then, positively,' says Booth, 'I will tell 'you. And I think I shall then shew you, that 'however well you may know the duty of a wife, 'I am not always able to behave like a husband. 'In a word, then, my dear, the secret is no more 'than this; I am unwilling you should receive any 'more presents from my lord.'

'Mercy upon me!' cries she, with all the marks of astonishment; 'what! a masquerade ticket!'—

'Yes, my dear,' cries he, 'that is, perhaps, the 'very worst and most dangerous of all. Few men 'make presents of those tickets to ladies, without 'intending to meet them at the place. And what 'do we know of your companion? To be sincere 'with you, I have not liked her behaviour for some 'time. What might be the consequence of going 'with such a woman to such a place, to meet such 'a person, I tremble to think.—And now, my dear,

'I have told you my reason of refusing her offer 'with some little vehemence, and, I think, I need 'explain myself no farther.'

'You need not, indeed, Sir,' answered she.—'Good Heavens! did I ever expect to hear this! I 'can appeal to Heaven, nay, I will appeal to 'yourself, Mr. Booth, if I have ever done any 'thing to deserve such a suspicion. If ever any 'action of mine, nay, if ever any thought had 'stained the innocence of my soul, I could be 'contented.'

'How cruelly do you mistake me,' said Booth—'what suspicion have I ever shewn?'

'Can you ask it,' answered she, 'after what you 'have just now declared?'

'If I have declared any suspicion of you,' replied he, 'or if ever I entertained a thought lead-'ing that way, may the worst of evils that ever 'afflicted human nature attend me. I know the 'pure innocence of that tender bosom, I do know 'it, my lovely angel, and adore it. The snares 'which might be laid for that innocence, were alone 'the cause of my apprehension. I feared what a 'wicked and voluptuous man, resolved to sacrifice 'every thing to the gratification of a sensual appe-'tite with the most delicious repast, might attempt. 'If ever I injured the unspotted whiteness of thy 'virtue in my imagination, may hell——'

'Do not terrify me,' cries she, interrupting him, 'with such imprecations. O Mr. Booth! Mr. 'Booth! you must well know that a woman's vir-'tue is always her sufficient guard. No husband, 'without suspecting that, can suspect any danger 'from those snares you mention—And why, if you 'are liable to take such things into your head, may 'not your suspicions fall on me, as well as on any 'other? for sure nothing was ever more unjust, I will

'not say ungrateful, than the suspicions which you 'have bestowed on his lordship. I do solemnly de- 'clare, in all the times I have seen the poor man, 'he hath never once offered the least forwardness. 'His behaviour hath been polite indeed, but rather 'remarkably distant than otherwise. Particularly 'when we played at cards together. I don't re- 'member he spoke ten words to me all the evening; 'and when I was at his house, though he shewed 'the greatest fondness imaginable to the children, 'he took so little notice of me, that a vain woman 'would have been very little pleased with him. 'And if he gave them many presents, he never of- 'fered me one. The first, indeed, which he ever 'offered me was that which you in that kind man- 'ner forced me to refuse.'

'All this may be only the effect of art,' said Booth. 'I am convinced he doth, nay, I am con- 'vinced he must like you; and my good friend 'James, who perfectly well knows the world, told 'me, that his lordship's character was that of the 'most profuse in his pleasures with women; nay, 'what said Mrs. James this very evening. "his "lordship is extremely generous—where he likes." '——I shall never forget the sneer with which she 'spoke these last words.'

'I am convinced they injure him,' cries Amelia. 'As for Mrs. James, she was always given to be 'censorious; I remarked it in her long ago, as her 'greatest fault. And for the colonel, I believe he 'may find faults enow of this kind in his own bo- 'som, without searching after them among his 'neighbours. I am sure he hath the most impu- 'dent look of all the men I know; and I solemnly 'declare, the very last time he was here, he put me 'out of countenance more than once.'

'Colonel James,' answered Booth, 'may have 'his faults very probably. I do not look upon him

'as a saint, nor do I believe he desires I should; 'but what interest could he have in abusing this 'lord's character to me? or why should I question 'his truth, when he assured me that my lord 'had never done an act of beneficence in his life, 'but for the sake of some woman whom he lusted 'after?'

'Then I myself can confute him,' replied Amelia; 'for besides his service to you, which, for the 'future, I shall wish to forget, and his kindness to 'my little babes, how inconsistent is the character 'which James gives of him, with his lordship's behaviour to his own nephew and niece, whose extreme fondness of their uncle sufficiently proclaims his goodness to them?—I need not mention all that I have heard from Mrs. Ellison, every 'word of which I believe; for I have great reason 'to think, notwithstanding some little levity, which, 'to give her her due, she sees and condemns in herself, she is a very good sort of woman.'

'Well, my dear,' cries Booth, 'I may have been 'deceived, and I heartily hope I am so; but in 'cases of this nature, it is always good to be on the 'surest side; for, as Congreve says,

'The wise too jealous are: Fools too secure.'

Here Amelia burst into tears, upon which, Booth immediately caught her in his arms, and endeavoured to comfort her.—Passion, however, for a while, obstructed her speech, and at last she cried, 'O, Mr. 'Booth! can I bear to hear the word jealousy from 'your mouth?'

'Why, my love,' said Booth, 'will you so fatally 'misunderstand my meaning; how often shall I protest that it is not of you, but of him that I was 'jealous. If you could look into my breast, and

'there read all the most secret thoughts of my 'heart, you would not see one faint idea to your 'dishonour.'

'I don't misunderstand you, my dear,' said she, 'so much as I am afraid you misunderstand your-'self. What is it you fear?—you mention not 'force, but snares. Is not this to confess, at least 'that you have some doubt of my understanding? '—do you then really imagine me so weak as to 'be cheated of my virtue?—am I to be deceived 'into an affection for a man, before I perceive the 'least inward hint of my danger? No, Mr. Booth, 'believe me, a woman must be a fool indeed, who 'can have in earnest such an excuse for her actions. 'I have not, I think, any very high opinion of my 'judgment; but so far I shall rely upon it, that 'no man breathing could have any such designs 'as you have apprehended, without my immedi-'ately seeing them; and how I should then act, I 'hope my whole conduct to you hath sufficiently 'declared.'

'Well, my dear,' cries Booth, 'I beg you will 'mention it no more; if possible, forget it. I hope, 'nay, I believe, I have been in the wrong; pray 'forgive me.'

'I will, I do forgive you, my dear,' said she, 'if 'forgiveness be a proper word for one whom you 'have rather made miserable than angry; but let 'me entreat you to banish for ever all such suspi-'cions from your mind. I hope Mrs. Ellison hath 'not discovered the real cause of your passion; 'but, poor woman, if she had, I am convinced it 'would go no farther. Oh, Heavens! I would not 'for the world it should reach his lordship's ears. 'You would lose the best friend that ever man had. '—Nay, I would not for his own sake, poor man! 'for I really believe it would affect him greatly,

'and I must, I cannot help having an esteem for so 'much goodness. An esteem which, by this dear 'hand,' said she, taking Booth's hand and kissing it, 'no man alive shall ever obtain by making love 'to me.'

Booth caught her in his arms, and tenderly embraced her. After which, the reconciliation soon became complete; and Booth, in the contemplation of his happiness, entirely buried all his jealous thoughts.

CHAP. VII.

A Chapter in which there is much Learning.

THE next morning, whilst Booth was gone to take his morning walk, Amelia went down into Mrs. Ellison's apartment, where, though she was received with great civility, yet she found that lady was not at all pleased with Mr. Booth; and by some hints which dropt from her in conversation, Amelia very greatly apprehended that Mrs. Ellison had too much suspicion of her husband's real uneasiness. For that lady declared very openly, she could not help perceiving what sort of man Mr. Booth was: 'And though I have the greatest regard for you, 'Madam, in the world,' said she, 'yet I think myself in honour obliged not to impose on his lordship, who, I know very well, hath conceived his 'greatest liking to the captain, on my telling him, 'that he was the best husband in the world.'

Amelia's fears gave her much disturbance; and when her husband returned, she acquainted him with them; upon which occasion, as it was natural,

she resumed a little the topic of their former discourse, nor could she help casting, though in very gentle terms, some slight blame on Booth, for having entertained a suspicion, which, she said, might in its consequence very possibly prove their ruin, and occasion the loss of his lordship's friendship.

Booth became highly affected with what his wife said, and the more, as he had just received a note from Colonel James, informing him that the colonel had heard of a vacant company in the regiment which Booth had mentioned to him, and that he had been with his lordship about it, who had promised to use his utmost interest to obtain him the command.

The poor man now expressed the utmost concern for his yesterday's behaviour, said, 'he believed the 'devil had taken possession of him,' and concluded with crying out, 'Sure I was born, my dearest 'creature, to be your torment.'

Amelia no sooner saw her husband's distress, than she instantly forbore whatever might seem likely to aggravate it, and applied herself with all her power to comfort him. 'If you will give me 'leave to offer my advice, my dearest soul,' said she, 'I think all might yet be remedied. I think 'you know me too well, to suspect that the desire 'of diversion should induce me to mention what I 'am now going to propose; and in that confidence, 'I will ask you to let me accept my lord's and 'Mrs. Ellison's offer, and go to the masquerade. 'No matter how little while I stay there; if you 'desire it, I will not be an hour from you. I can 'make an hundred excuses to come home, or tell a 'real truth, and say, I am tired of the place. The 'bare going will cure every thing.'

Amelia had no sooner done speaking, than Booth

immediately approved her advice, and redily gave his consent. He could not, however, help saying, 'That the shorter her stay was there, the more 'agreeable it would be to him; for you know, my 'dear,' said he, 'I would never willingly be a mo-'ment out of your sight.'

In the afternoon, Amelia sent to invite Mrs. Ellison to a dish of tea; and Booth undertook to laugh off all that had passed yesterday, in which attempt, the abundant good-humour of that lady gave him great hopes of success.

Mrs. Bennet came that afternoon to make a visit, and was almost an hour with Booth and Amelia, before the entry of Mrs. Ellison.

Mr. Booth had hitherto rather disliked this young lady, and had wondered at the pleasure which Amelia declared she took in her company. This afternoon, however, he changed his opinion, and liked her almost as much as his wife had done. She did indeed behave at this time with more than ordinary gaiety; and good-humour gave a glow to her countenance that set off her features, which were very pretty, to the best advantage, and lessened the deadness that had usually appeared in her complexion.

But if Booth was now pleased with Mrs. Bennet, Amelia was still more pleased with her than ever. For when their discourse turned on love, Amelia discovered that her new friend had all the same sentiments on that subject with herself. In the course of their conversation, Booth gave Mrs. Bennet a hint of wishing her a good husband, upon which both the ladies declaimed against second marriages, with equal vehemence.

Upon this occasion, Booth and his wife discovered a talent in their visitant, to which they had been before entirely strangers, and for which they both

greatly admired her; and this was that the lady was a good scholar, in which, indeed, she had the advantage of poor Amelia, whose reading was confined to English plays and poetry; besides which, I think, she had conversed only with the divinity of the great and learned Dr. Barrow, and with the histories of the excellent Bishop Burnet.

Amelia delivered herself on the subject of second marriages with much eloquence and great good sense; but when Mrs. Bennet came to give her opinion, she spoke in the following manner: 'I 'shall not enter into the question concerning the 'legality of bigamy. Our laws certainly allow it, 'and so, I think, doth our religion. We are now 'debating only on the decency of it, and in this 'light, I own myself as strenuous an advocate 'against it, as any Roman matron would have been 'in those ages of the commonwealth, when it was 'held to be infamous. For my own part, how 'great a paradox soever my opinion may seem, I 'solemnly declare, I see but little difference between 'having two husbands at one time, and at several 'times; and of this I am very confident, that the 'same degree of love for a first husband, which 'preserves a woman in the one case, will preserve 'her in the other. There is one argument, which 'I scarce know how to deliver before you, Sir; 'but—if a woman hath lived with her first husband 'without having children, I think it unpardonable 'in her to carry barrenness into a second family. 'On the contrary, if she hath children by her first 'husband, to give them a second father is still more 'unpardonable.'

'But suppose, Madam,' cries Booth, interrupting her, with a smile, 'she should have had children by 'her first husband, and have lost them.'

'That is a case,' answered she, with a sigh,

'which I did not desire to think of, and, I must 'own it, the most favourable light in which a se-'cond marriage can be seen. But the scriptures, 'as Petrarch observes, rather suffer them than com-'mend them; and St. Jerom speaks against them 'with the utmost bitterness.'—'I remember,' cries Booth, (who was willing either to shew his learning, or to draw out the lady's) 'a very wise law of 'Charondas, the famous lawgiver of Thurium, by 'which men, who married a second time, were re-'moved from all public councils; for it was scarce 'reasonable to suppose, that he who was so great 'a fool in his own family, should be wise in public 'affairs. And though second marriages were per-'mitted among the Romans, yet they were at the 'same time discouraged; and those Roman wi-'dows who refused them, were held in high es-'teem, and honoured with what Valerius Maximus 'calls the Corona Pudicitiæ. In the noble family 'of Camilli, there was not, in many ages, a single 'instance of this, which Martial calls adultery:

'*Quæ toties nubit, non nubit; adultera lege est.*'

'True, Sir,' says Mrs. Bennet, 'and Virgil calls 'this a violation of chastity, and makes Dido speak 'of it with the utmost detestation:

'*Sed mihi vel Tellus optem prius ima dehiscat;*
'*Vel Pater omnipotens adigat me fulmine ad umbras,*
'*Pallentes umbras Erebi, noctemque profundam,*
'*Ante, pudor, quam te violo, aut tua jura resolvo.*
'*Ille meos, primum qui me sibi junxit, amores,*
'*Ille habeat semper secum, servetque Sepulchro.*'

She repeated these lines with so strong an emphasis, that she almost frightened Amelia out of her wits, and not a little staggered Booth, who was himself no contemptible scholar—He expressed great

admiration of the lady's learning; upon which she said it was all the fortune given her by her father, and all the dower left her by her husband; 'and 'sometimes,' said she, 'I am inclined to think I 'enjoy more pleasure from it, than if they had be-'stowed on me what the world would in general 'call more valuable.'—She then took occasion, from the surprise which Booth had affected to conceive at her repeating Latin with so good a grace, to comment on that great absurdity, (for so she termed it) of excluding women from learning; for which they were equally qualified with the men, and in which so many had made so notable a proficiency; for a proof of which, she mentioned Madame Dacier, and many others.

Though both Booth and Amelia outwardly concurred with her sentiments, it may be a question whether they did not assent rather out of complaisance, than from their real judgement.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing some unaccountable Behaviour in Mrs. Ellison.

MRS. ELLISON made her entrance at the end of the preceding discourse. At her first appearance, she put on an unusual degree of formality and reserve; but when Amelia had acquainted her that she designed to accept the favour intended her, she soon began to alter the gravity of her muscles, and presently fell in with that ridicule which Booth thought proper to throw on his yesterday's behaviour.

The conversation now became very lively and pleasant, in which Booth having mentioned the dis-

course that passed in the last chapter, and having greatly complimented Mrs. Bennet's speech on that occasion, Mrs. Ellison, who was as strenuous an advocate on the other side, began to rally that lady extremely, declaring it was a certain sign she intended to marry again soon. 'Married ladies,' cries she, 'I believe, sometimes think themselves in earnest in such declarations, though they are oftener perhaps meant as compliments to their husbands; but when widows exclaim loudly against second marriages, I would always lay a wager, that the man, if not the wedding-day, is absolutely fixed on.'

Mrs. Bennet made very little answer to this sarcasm. Indeed, she had scarce opened her lips from the time of Mrs. Ellison's coming into the room, and had grown particularly grave at the mention of the masquerade. Amelia imputed this to her being left out of the party, a matter which is often no small mortification to human pride, and in a whisper asked Mrs. Ellison, if she could not procure a third ticket; to which she received an absolute negative.

During the whole time of Mrs. Bennet's stay, which was above an hour afterwards, she remained perfectly silent, and looked extremely melancholy. This made Amelia very uneasy, as she concluded she had guessed the cause of her vexation. In which opinion she was the more confirmed, from certain looks of no very pleasant kind, which Mrs. Bennet now and then cast on Mrs. Ellison, and the more than ordinary concern that appeared in the former lady's countenance, whenever the masquerade was mentioned, and which, unfortunately, was the principal topic of their discourse; for Mrs. Ellison gave a very elaborate description of the extreme beauty of the place, and elegance of the diversion.

When Mrs. Bennet was departed, Amelia could not help again soliciting Mrs. Ellison for another ticket, declaring she was certain Mrs. Bennet had a great inclination to go with them; but Mrs. Ellison again excused herself from asking it of his lordship. 'Besides, Madam,' says she, 'if I would go thither with Mrs. Bennet, which, I own to you, I don't chuse, as she is a person whom *nobody knows*, I very much doubt whether she herself would like it; for she is a woman of a very unaccountable turn. All her delight lies in books, and, as for public diversions, I have heard her often declare her abhorrence of them.'

'What then,' said Amelia, 'could occasion all that gravity, from the moment the masquerade was mentioned?'

'As to that,' answered the other, 'there is no guessing. You have seen her altogether as grave before now. She hath had these fits of gravity at times ever since the death of her husband.'

'Poor creature!' cries Amelia, 'I heartily pity her; for she must certainly suffer a great deal on these occasions. I declare I have taken a strange fancy to her.'

'Perhaps you would not like her so well, if you knew her thoroughly,' answered Mrs. Ellison.—'She is, upon the whole, but of a whimsical temper; and, if you will take my opinion, you should not cultivate too much intimacy with her. I know you will never mention what I say; but she is like some pictures which please best at a distance.'

Amelia did not seem to agree with these sentiments, and she greatly importuned Mrs. Ellison to be more explicit, but to no purpose; she continued to give only dark hints to Mrs. Bennet's disadvantage; and, if ever she let drop something a little too harsh, she failed not immediately to contradict her-

self, by throwing some gentle commendations into the other scale: so that her conduct appeared utterly unaccountable to Amelia, and, upon the whole, she knew not whether to conclude Mrs. Ellison to be a friend or an enemy to Mrs. Bennet.

During this latter conversation, Booth was not in the room; for he had been summoned down stairs by the sergeant, who came to him with news from Murphy, whom he had met that evening, and who assured the sergeant, that if he was desirous of recovering the debt, and which he had before pretended to have on Booth, he might shortly have an opportunity; for that there was to be a very strong petition to the board, the next time they sat. Murphy said further, That he need not fear having his money; for that to his certain knowledge the captain had several things of great value, and even his children had gold watches.

This greatly alarmed Booth, and still more, when the sergeant reported to him from Murphy, that all these things had been seen in his possession within a day last past. He now plainly perceived, as he thought, that Murphy himself, or one of his emissaries, had been the supposed madman; and he now very well accounted to himself in his own mind, for all that had happened, conceiving that the design was to examine into the state of his effects, and to try whether it was worth his creditors while to plunder him by law.

At his return to his apartment, he communicated what he had heard to Amelia and Mrs. Ellison, not disguising his apprehensions of the enemy's intentions; but Mrs. Ellison endeavoured to laugh him out of his fears, calling him faint-hearted, and assuring him he might depend on her lawyer.—'Till 'you hear from him,' said she, 'you may rest entirely contented; for, take my word for it, no

'danger can happen to you, of which you will not 'be timely apprised by him. And as for the fellow 'that had the impudence to come into your room, 'if he was sent on such an errand as you mention, 'I heartily wish I had been at home; I would 'have secured him safe with a constable, and have 'carried him directly before justice Thrasher. I 'know the justice is an enemy to bailiffs, on his 'own account.'

This heartening speech a little roused the courage of Booth, and somewhat comforted Amelia, though the spirits of both had been too much hurried, to suffer them either to give or receive much entertainment that evening; which Mrs. Ellison perceiving, soon took her leave, and left this unhappy couple to seek relief from sleep, that powerful friend to the distressed, though, like other powerful friends, he is not always ready to give his assistance to those who want it most.

CHAP. IX.

Containing a very strange Incident.

WHEN the husband and wife were alone, they again talked over the news which the sergeant had brought; on which occasion, Amelia did all she could to conceal her own fears, and to quiet those of her husband. At last she turned the conversation to another subject, and poor Mrs. Bennet was brought on the carpet. 'I should be sorry,' cries Amelia, 'to find I had conceived an affection for a 'bad woman; and yet I begin to fear Mrs. Ellison 'knows something of her more than she cares to 'discover; why else should she be unwilling to be 'seen with her in public? Besides, I have observed 'that Mrs. Ellison hath been always backward to

'introduce her to me, nor would ever bring her to
'my apartment, though I have often desired her.
'Nay, she hath given me frequent hints not to cul-
'tivate the acquaintance. What do you think, my
'dear?—I should be very sorry to contract an in-
'timacy with a wicked person.'

'Nay, my dear,' cries Booth, 'I know no more
'of her, nor indeed hardly so much as yourself.—
'But this I think, that if Mrs. Ellison knows any
'reason why she should not have introduced Mrs.
'Bennet into your company, she was very much
'in the wrong in introducing her into it.'

In discourses of this kind they passed the remainder of the evening. In the morning Booth rose early, and going down stairs received from little Betty a sealed note, which contained the following words:

Beware, beware, beware,
For I apprehend a dreadful snare
Is laid for virtuous innocence,
Under a friend's false pretence.

Booth immediately inquired of the girl who brought this note? and was told, it came by a chairman, who, having delivered it, departed without saying a word.

He was extremely staggered at what he read, and presently referred the advice to the same affair on which he had received those hints from Atkinson the preceding evening; but when he came to consider the words more maturely, he could not so well reconcile the two last lines of this poetical epistle, if it may be so called, with any danger which the law gave him reason to apprehend.—Mr. Murphy and his gang could not well be said to attack either his innocence or virtue; nor did they attack him under any colour or pretence of friendship.

After much deliberation on this matter, a very

strange suspicion came into his head; and this was, that he was betrayed by Mrs. Ellison. He had for some time conceived no very high opinion of that good gentlewoman, and he now began to suspect that she was bribed to betray him. By this means he thought he could best account for the strange appearance of the supposed madman. And when this conceit once had birth in his mind, several circumstances nourished and improved it. Among these, were her jocose behaviour and raillery on that occasion, and her attempt to ridicule his fears from the message which the sergeant had brought him.

This suspicion was indeed preposterous, and not at all warranted by, or even consistent with, the character and whole behaviour of Mrs. Ellison, but it was the only one which at that time suggested itself to his mind; and however blameable it might be, it was certainly not unnatural in him to entertain it; for so great a torment is anxiety to the human mind, that we always endeavour to relieve ourselves from it, by guesses, however doubtful or uncertain; on all which occasions, dislike and hatred are the surest guides to lead our suspicion to its object.

When Amelia rose to breakfast, Booth produced the note which he had received, saying, 'My dear, 'you have so often blamed me for keeping secrets 'from you, and I have so often, indeed, endeavour'ed to conceal secrets of this kind from you with 'such ill success, that, I think, I shall never more 'attempt it.' Amelia read the letter hastily, and seemed not a little discomposed, then turning to Booth, with a very disconsolate countenance, she said, 'Sure fortune takes a delight in terrifying us! 'what can be the meaning of this?'—Then fixing her eyes attentively on the paper, she perused it for some time, till Booth cried——'How is it possible, 'my Emily, you can read such stuff patiently! the 'verses are certainly as bad as ever were written.'

'I was trying, my dear,' answered she, 'to recol-'lect the hand; for I will take my oath, I have 'seen it before, and that very lately,' and suddenly she cried out with great emotion, 'I remember it 'perfectly now—It is Mrs. Bennet's hand. Mrs. 'Ellison shewed me a letter from her but a day or 'two ago. It is a very remarkable hand, and I am 'positive it is her's.'

'If it be her's,' cries Booth, 'what can she pos-'sibly mean by the latter part of her caution? sure 'Mrs. Ellison hath no intention to betray us.'

'I know not what she means,' answered Amelia, 'but I am resolved to know immediately; for I 'am certain of the hand. By the greatest luck in 'the world, she told me yesterday where her lodg-'ings were, when she pressed me exceedingly to 'come and see her. She lives but a very few doors 'from us, and I will go to her this moment.'

Booth made not the least objection to his wife's design. His curiosity was, indeed, as great as her's, and so was his impatience to satisfy it, though he mentioned not this his impatience to Amelia; and perhaps it had been well for him if he had.

Amelia, therefore, presently equipped herself in her walking dress, and leaving her children to the care of her husband, made all possible haste to Mrs. Bennet's lodgings.

Amelia waited near five minutes at Mrs. Bennet's door, before any one came to open it; at length, a maid-servant appeared, who being asked if Mrs. Bennet was at home, answered with some confusion in her countenance, that she did not know; 'but, 'Madam,' says she, 'if you will send up your 'name, I will go and see.' Amelia then told her name; and the wench, after staying a considerable time, returned and acquainted her that Mrs. Bennet was at home. She was then ushered into a

parlour, and told that the lady would wait on her presently.

In this parlour, Amelia cooled her heels, as the phrase is, near a quarter of an hour. She seemed, indeed, at this time, in the miserable situation of one of those poor wretches, who make their morning visits to the great, to solicit favours, or perhaps to solicit the payment of a debt; for both are alike treated as beggars, and the latter sometimes considered as the more troublesome beggars of the two.

During her stay here, Amelia observed the house to be in great confusion; a great bustle was heard above stairs, and the maid ran up and down several times in a great hurry.

At length Mrs. Bennet herself came in. She was greatly disordered in her looks, and had, as the women call it, huddled on her clothes in much haste; for in truth, she was in bed when Amelia first came. Of this fact she informed her, as the only apology she could make for having caused her to wait so long for her company.

Amelia very readily accepted her apology, but asked her with a smile, if these early hours were usual with her? Mrs. Bennet turned as red as scarlet at the question, and answered, 'No, indeed, dear Madam. I am for the most part, a very early riser; but I happened accidentally to sit up very late last night. I am sure I had little expectation of your intending me such a favour this morning.'

Amelia looking very stedfastly at her, said: 'Is it possible, Madam, you should think such a note as this would raise no curiosity in me?' She then gave her the note, asking her, if she did not know the hand?

Mrs. Bennet appeared in the utmost surprise and confusion at this instant. Indeed, if Amelia had conceived but the slightest suspicion before, the be-

haviour of the lady would have been a sufficient confirmation to her of the truth. She waited not, therefore, for an answer, which, indeed, the other seemed in no haste to give; but conjured her in the most earnest manner, to explain to her the meaning of so extraordinary an act of friendship: 'For so,' said she, 'I esteem it; being convinced you must 'have sufficient reason for the warning you have 'given me.'

Mrs. Bennet, after some hesitation, answered; 'I need not, I believe, tell you how much I am surprised at what you have shewn me, and the chief 'reason of my surprise is, how you came to discover my hand. Sure, Madam, you have not shewn 'it to Mrs. Ellison.'

Amelia declared she had not; but desired she would question her no farther. 'What signifies how 'I discovered it, since your hand it certainly is?'

'I own it is,' cries Mrs. Bennet, recovering her spirits; 'and since you have not shewn it to that 'woman, I am satisfied. I begin to guess now 'whence you might have your information; but no 'matter, I wish I had never done any thing of 'which I ought to be more ashamed—No one can 'I think, justly accuse me of a crime on that account; and I thank Heaven, my shame will never 'be directed by the false opinion of the world.—'Perhaps it was wrong to shew my letter; but when 'I consider all circumstances, I can forgive it.'

'Since you have guessed the truth,' said Amelia, 'I am not obliged to deny it. She, indeed, shewed 'me your letter; but I am sure you have not the 'least reason to be ashamed of it. On the contrary, 'your behaviour on so melancholy an occasion was 'highly praise-worthy; and your bearing up under 'such afflictions, as the loss of a husband in so dreadful a situation, was truly great and heroical.'

'So Mrs. Ellison then hath shewn you my letter?' cries Mrs. Bennet eagerly.

'Why, did not you guess it yourself?' answered Amelia, 'otherwise I am sure I have betrayed my honour in mentioning it. I hope you have not drawn me inadvertently into any breach of my promise. Did you not assert, and that with an absolute certainty, that you knew she had shewn me your letter, and that you was not angry with her for so doing?'

'I am so confused,' replied Mrs. Bennet, 'that I scarce know what I say; yes, yes, I remember I did say so——I wish I had no greater reason to be angry with her than that.'

'For Heaven's sake,' cries Amelia, 'do not delay my request any longer; what you say now greatly increases my curiosity; and my mind will be on the rack till you discover your whole meaning; for I am more and more convinced, that something of the utmost importance was the purport of your message.'

'Of the utmost importance, indeed,' cries Mrs. Bennet, 'at least you will own my apprehensions were sufficiently well founded—O gracious Heaven! how happy shall I think myself, if I should have proved your preservation! I will, indeed, explain my meaning; but, in order to disclose all my fears in their just colours, I must unfold my whole history to you. Can you have patience, Madam, to listen to the story of the most unfortunate of women?'

Amelia assured her of the highest attention; and Mrs. Bennet soon after began to relate what is written in the seventh book of this history.

END OF THE TENTH VOLUME.

Printed by C. Squire,
Furnival's-Inn-Court, Holborn.